



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

221
.V82

New Ser.

v.1

1882

copy 5

UNIVERSITY OF VIRGINIA LIBRARY



X001048157

Digitized by Google

**LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF VIRGINIA**



**PRESENTED BY
Mr. & Mrs. Bernard Chamberlain**

F

221

.V82

new ser.

v.1

1882

copy 5

S

7

Ruzick

F
221
V82
v.1
1662
1785

Spotswood Letters.

VOL. I.

Virginia Historical Society.

A handwritten signature in cursive script, appearing to read "Peyton", located at the top right of the page.

COLLECTIONS
OF THE
Virginia Historical Society.
" *New Series.*

VOL. I.

COMMITTEE OF PUBLICATION.

ARCHER ANDERSON.

J. L. M. CURRY.

EDWARD V. VALENTINE.



Philosophy

J. G. G. G. G.

Philosophy



W. Spotswood

Digitized by Google

THE
OFFICIAL LETTERS
OF
Alexander Spotswood,

LIEUTENANT-GOVERNOR OF THE COLONY
OF VIRGINIA, 1710-1722,

Now First Printed from the Manuscript

IN THE COLLECTIONS OF THE

Virginia Historical Society,

WITH AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES BY

R. A. BROCK,

Corresponding Secretary and Librarian of the Society.

VOL. I.



RICHMOND, VIRGINIA.
PUBLISHED BY THE SOCIETY.
MDCCCLXXXII.

WM. ELLIS JONES,
PRINTER,
RICHMOND, VA.

PREFACE.

The Publishing Committee herewith presents to the Society the first volume of the Official Letters of Alexander Spotswood, written during his administration (1710-1712) as Lieutenant-Governor of the Colony of Virginia, and printed from the Manuscript in its Cabinet. The text of the volume includes the period from June 20, 1710, to July 26, 1712. Another volume to be printed, which will complete the publication of the manuscript, will be accompanied by a full and carefully prepared analytical index of the entire work.

The manuscript was used by Mr. Bancroft in the preparation of his History of the United States, and its value is distinctly affirmed by him. A little later, it was loaned by its owner, John R. Spotswood, Esq., of Orange county, Va., to George W. Featherstonehaugh, author and geologist, who carried it with him to England. With the lapse of years no information regarding it being obtainable, it became the object of repeatedly expressed solicitude on the part of American writers, who at last, in the futility of their inquiries, had begun to fear that it was no longer in existence.

The manuscript remained, however, in the possession of the widow of Mr. Featherstonehaugh, from whom it was obtained by this Society by purchase in the year 1873.





INTRODUCTION.

Colonel Alexander Spotswood, who arrived in Virginia in June, 1710, as the Deputy or Lieutenant of George Hamilton, Earl of Orkney, the Governor and Commander-in-Chief of the Colony,^a was descended from the ancient Scottish family of Spottiswoode, a local sur-name assumed by the proprietors of the lands and Barony of Spottiswoode, in the parish of Gordon and county of Berwick, at the earliest period when sur-names became hereditary in Scotland; but his lineage is yet more nobly avouched in the virtue, learning, ability and courage of its representatives through centuries of succession.

The traditional account of the family is, that the male line of the ancient barons of Spottiswoode failing in the reign of Alexander II, a younger son of the illustrious house of Gordon, which was then seated in the same county, married the heiress, and was obliged to take upon him the name of Spottiswoode; but he retained in his armorial bearing the boar's head of the Gordons, which his successors, the barons of Spottiswoode, carry to this day.^b

The immediate progenitor of this family was Robert de Spotswood, born during the reign of Alexander III, who succeeded to

^a Under this unjust policy of the British Ministry, of giving to those whom it desired to favor, station and emolument without accompanying service, the Earl of Orkney continued in the enjoyment of a considerable revenue as Commander-in-Chief of the Colony of Virginia, for quite forty years, without performing personally a single act of government.

^b The arms of the family are: *As. a chev. gu., betw. three oak trees eradicated, vert.* Crest. *An eagle displayed gu. looking to the sun in splendor.* Motto: *Potior ut potior.*

the crown of Scotland in 1249. Seventh in descent from Robert, was John Spotswood, born 1510, died 1585; Superintendent of Lothian, a zealous Protestant divine, and one of the Compilers of "The First Book of Discipline and of the Confession of Faith." His son, John Spotswood or Spottiswoode, born in 1595, became Archbishop of Glasgow, and one of the Privy Council of Scotland in 1603; was transferred to St. Andrews in 1615, and made Chancellor of Scotland in 1635. He suffered from the popular indignation at the attempt, discouraged by him, to impose a liturgy on the Scottish Church, and was deposed and excommunicated by the Assembly which met at Glasgow in November, 1638. He retired to London, where he died November 26th, 1639. He was the author, among other works, of "The History of the Church and State of Scotland." His second son, Sir Robert Spottiswoode, President of the Court of Session, author of "The Practicks of the Laws of Scotland," a man of distinguished learning and merit, was born in 1596, and met his death at the hands of Parliament, January 17, 1646, as an adherent of the royal cause. The son of the last Robert Spotswood, who died in 1688, married a widow, Catherine Elliott.^c Their only child, Alexander, the subject of this notice, was born in 1676, at Tangier, then an English colony in Africa, his father being resident surgeon to its governor, the Earl of Middleton, and to the garrison.^d

^c There is in the State Library of Virginia a handsome portrait of a martial personage, delineated in complete armor, formerly preserved at "Nottingham," the seat of General Alexander Spotswood, of the Revolution, (grandson of Governor Alexander Spotswood), and later at "Sedley Lodge," the seat of William Spotswood, Esq., in Orange county, Virginia; which tradition names as "General Elliott, half-brother of the Governor, who commanded the cavalry under Marlborough at the battle of Blenheim, and also served under the Prince Eugene." *Campbell's Spotswood Genealogy*, p. 16.

There are also in the State Library, portraits of Governor Spotswood, representing him in full court dress of scarlet velvet, and of his wife "Lady" Spotswood, which have been transmitted in the family with the portrait of "General Elliott." Another portrait of Governor Spotswood, which was preserved at "Chelsea," the seat of the Moore family, in King William county, is now in the possession of Edward V. Valentine, Esq., the eminent sculptor, Richmond, Va. Blenheim Castle is represented in the background of this portrait.

^d He was the author of "Plants within the Fortifications of Tangier in 1673." Published in the *Philosophical Transactions* in 1696.

Alexander Spotswood was literally bred in the army from his childhood, and, uniting genius with courage, served with distinction under the Duke of Marlborough. He was dangerously wounded in the breast by the first fire of the French on the Confederates at the Battle of Blenheim,^e during the heat of which sanguinary encounter he served as Deputy Quarter Master General, with the rank of Colonel.

Though Virginia enjoyed tranquility, and the voice of faction was hushed at the time of the arrival of Spotswood, yet the condition of the colony was not prosperous. Her defenceless coasts were invaded by privateers and pirates, and, through the decline of her staple commerce, because of the quantities of tobacco procured from Germany by the Dutch, the surreptitious shipment of it from the colony, and the greed of the English factors, there was a just complaint of the scantiness of essential supplies of English manufactures.

Spotswood was hailed with acclamation by the colonists, because he brought with him the invaluable benefit of the *habeas corpus*^f act, which had been denied by the late ministers, when their representatives endeavored to extend it by their own authority. But while the Assembly regarded the recent favors granted, they could not, in October, 1710, be persuaded to see the defenceless condition of the colony, since the certain expense of protection appeared more immediate than distant danger, nor did the fear of a threatened French invasion the following summer, appeal any more effectually. They refused to pay the expense of collecting the militia, or to discharge the debt due, because, as Spotswood informed the ministry, "they hoped by their frugality to recommend themselves to the populace."

They would only consent to levy £20,000 by duties laid chiefly on British manufactures, and insisted on discriminating privileges to Virginia owners of vessels in preference to British Subjects, upon the plea that the exemption had always existed. The Governor declined the proffered levy, dissolved the assembly, and in

^eIn after life, while Governor of Virginia, he was wont to show to his guests a four-pound cannon ball which struck his coat in that engagement.

^fNo enactment by the Assembly, regarding the *habeas corpus* act, appears until August, 1736. For which see *Hening* iv., p. 489.

anticipation of an Indian war, was obliged to secure arms and supplies from England.

By prompt and energetic measures he quelled in the neighboring province of North Carolina, an insurrection which threatened to subvert all regular government there; and later, in the war with the Tuscarora Indians, (commenced by a massacre on the frontier of North Carolina, in September, 1711,) by a conciliatory course, prevented the tributary Indians from joining the enemy, with whom in January, 1714, he concluded a peace, and blending humanity with vigor, he taught them that whilst he could punish violence he commiserated their fate.

When a new Assembly was called by Spotswood in 1712, they did more than he expected, and discharged most of the debts of the Colony, when he demonstrated that the standing revenue had been so defective during the previous twenty-two years as to have required £7,000 from the monarch's private estate to make up the deficiencies in governmental expense.

The frontier of the colony being no longer subjected to Indian incursions, the expenditure of government was reduced to one-third of what had been previously required, and under the able administration of Spotswood, Virginia advanced in commerce, population and wealth more rapidly than any of her sister colonies.* A settlement of German Protestants was also effected,

g It was an era, too, of expanding intelligence, increasing refinement, and luxurious expenditure. The Virginia colonist was essentially a transplanted Englishman in tastes and convictions, and with the acquisition of wealth he naturally emulated the social amenities and the luxurious living of the aristocratic class of the beloved Mother Country. The sons of the wealthy planter were educated in England, an opportunity, under the lustrous *regime* of Queen Anne, golden in its intellectual inspirations. The influence of Addison, of Steele, Pope, Swift, Congreve and Prior, was fruitful. Books were a concomitant in the houses of the better class of the Virginia colonists, from an early period, as is evidenced by the survival to this day of volumes inscribed with tokens of ownership of the 17th Century.

In the early decades of the 18th Century, libraries, comprehensive in subject and extensive for the period, became quite numerous in the Colony.

Catalogues of the libraries of Colonel Wm. Byrd of "Westover," (the second of the name), and of John Mercer of "Marlboro" (who compiled that edition of the Laws of Virginia known as Mercer's Abridgement), are in the possession of the writer. The first enumerates 3,625 volumes. In the last, the titles

under the auspices of the Governor, on the Rapidan river, which was called after the name of his residence, Germanna. A profitable trade was established with the West Indies, in the exchange of corn, lumber and salted provisions, for sugar, rum and wine. In 1715, the population of Virginia, was 72,500 whites and 23,000 negroes, it being of the American colonies, second in number only to that of Massachusetts, which was only one thousand greater. The slave population of Virginia was, during the reign of George I, increased by ten thousand. The colony now comprised twenty-five counties, represented by fifty-two Burgesses. The government was administered by a governor (appointed by the King), who nominated inferior magistrates and officers; and by twelve councillors, also created by the royal mandate.

The energy and discipline of Spotswood soon ran counter to the economical spirit of the Assembly, whom he further offended by his haughtiness. Anonymous letters were constantly transmitted against him to the Board of Trade, who gave him an opportunity of vindicating in the vigour of his replies the wisdom and beneficence of his administration. As zealous a Churchman

only are given of the miscellaneous books, but familiar as they are in their identity, the number of volumes, it is evident, must have been near 700. Of law, the number given is 354—making a total of at least 1,000. The advertisement of his widow and executrix, in 1770, in the *Virginia Gazette*, indeed, states the number as 1,500.

The library of Sir John Randolph is believed to have been as large, if not larger, and numerous others, among them that of George Mason, of "Gunston," the author of the Bill of Rights, a few years later, were nearly as extensive.

In the Inventory and Appraisement of the library of John Herbert, "Gent.," dec'd, dated July 15, 1760, and of record in Chesterfield County Court, there are enumerated nearly 300 law and miscellaneous books. The writer has in his personal library, representative volumes from the libraries above, and from those of Wm. Mitchell, Wm. Beverley and Robert Beverley, the historian, Dr. James Blair, Richard Cary, Wm. Stith, Benj. Waller, Gabriel Jones, Robert Bolling, Sen'r, and Robert Bolling of "Chellowe," James Mercer, General Hugh Mercer, M. D., J. Power, George Wythe, Thos. Jefferson, John Camm, Patrick Henry, Judge Paul, and Colonel Edward Carrington, James Minge, Wilson Roscow Curle, Ralph Wormeley, Jr., of "Rosegill," John Page, William and Edmund Randolph, St. George Tucker, Colonel Theodorick Bland, The Earl of Dunmore, James Mercer, Bartholomew Dandridge, John Mayo, Edmund Pendleton, John Tazewell, and others, many of them with armorial book-plates.

as he is proven to have been, he yet in the exercise of the right of induction, incurred the animosity of the Bishop's Commissary, James Blair, who laid formal complaint against him before the King. Col. Wm. Byrd was also sent over by the colony in 1719, to represent its grievances, but being unsuccessful in his embassy, he begged the Board of Trade "to recommend forgiveness and moderation to both parties." A more harmonious season ensued, and the Governor, Council and the Assembly concurred in measures for the public welfare and prosperity.

The pirates who infested the coast were subdued, and the frontiers were extended to the foot of the Blue Ridge mountains, a passage across which had been discovered by an expedition made under the leadership of Spotswood in 1716, and composed of some of the first gentlemen in the Colony. Upon its return the Governor presented each of his companions with a golden horse-shoe (some of which are said to have been covered with valuable stones, resembling heads of nails), bearing the inscription: "*Sic juvat transcendere montes.*" In the year 1720, two new counties, Spotsylvania and Brunswick, were established. Spotswood urged upon the British Government the policy of establishing a chain of posts beyond the Alleghanies from the lakes to the Mississippi, to restrain the encroachments of the French. His wise recommendation was at first unheeded, and it was not until after the treaty of Aix-la-Chapelle that it was adopted. He was the author of an act for improving the staple of tobacco, and making tobacco notes the medium of circulation. Being a master of the military art, he kept the militia under admirable discipline. He was a proficient in mathematics, built the octagon magazine,^a rebuilt William and Mary College, and made improvements in the Governor's house and gardens. He was an excellent judge on the bench. At his instance a grant of £1,000 was made by the Governors and Visitors of the College in 1718, and a fund Established for instructing Indian children in Christianity, and, he erected a school for that purpose on the Southern frontier, at Fort Christianna, established on the South side of the Meherrin river, in what is now Southampton County. The Rev. Charles Griffin had charge of the school in 1715, at which time there

^a Still standing in Williamsburg, but degraded to the uses of a stable.

were seventy-seven Indian children under instruction.ⁱ Spotswood was styled the "Tubal Cain of Virginia," and was, indeed, the first to establish a regular furnace in North America. But, despite his momentous services to the colony, intrigue, as his friends urge, at length effected his removal as Governor in September, 1722.

His character and administration are thus warmly eulogized by Chalmers:^j "There was a utility in his designs, a vigor in his conduct, and an attachment to the true interest of the kingdom and the colony which merit the greatest praise. Had he attended more to the courtly maxim of Charles the Second, 'to quarrel with no man, however great might be the provocation, since he knew not how soon he should be obliged to act with him,' that able officer might be recommended as the model of a provincial governor. The fabled heroes who had discovered the uses of the anvil and the axe, who introduced the labors of the plough, with the arts of the fisher, have been immortalized as the greatest benefactors of mankind. Had Spotswood even invaded the privileges, while he only mortified the pride of the Virginians, they ought to have erected a statue to the memory of the ruler who gave them the manufacture of iron, and showed them by his active example that it is diligence and attention which can alone make a people great."

In the county of Spotsylvania, Spotswood had, about the year 1716, founded on a horseshoe peninsula of four hundred acres on the Rapidan, the little town of Germanna, so called after the Germans, sent over by Queen Anne, and settled in that quarter, and at this place he resided after his retirement. A church was built there mainly at his expense. Possessing an extensive tract of forty-five thousand acres of land, which abounded in iron ore, he engaged largely in connection with Robert Cary of England, and others in Virginia, in the iron manufacture. In the year 1730 he was made deputy postmaster-general for the American Colonies, and held the office until 1739; and it was he who promoted Benjamin Franklin to the office of post-master for the Province of Pennsylvania. He married in 1724, Ann Butler, the daughter

ⁱ *Campbell's History of Virginia*, p. 384.

^j *Introduction to the Revolt of the American Colonies*, vol. ii, p. 78.

of Richard Bryan, Esq., of Westminster. She derived her middle name from James Butler, Duke of Ormond, her god-father. She had issue: John, Robert, Anne Catharine, and Dorothea. John Spotswood married in 1745, Mary, daughter of William Dandridge of the British Navy, and their issue was two sons: General Alexander, and Captain John Spotswood of the army of the Revolution, and two daughters: Mary and Anne. Robert, the younger son of the Governor, and an officer under Washington in the French and Indian war, was slain by the Indians in 1756. Anne Catharine, the elder daughter of Governor Spotswood, married Bernard Moore,^k Esq., of "Chelsea," in the county of King William. Dorothea, the younger daughter, married Cap-

^k For a Genealogy of the Moore Family, contributed by the present writer, see the *Richmond Standard* of Sept. 3, 10-17, 1881. The arms of Augustine Moore, the father of Bernard Moore of "Chelsea," were: *On a field ermine, 3 greyhounds, sable courant, collared gules by augmentation; a lion regardant or, on a field gules.* Motto: *Swift in pursuit, bold in attack.* According to Burke (General Armoury), these arms are those of "Moore of Appleby-Parva, counties of Leicester and Derby, a manor purchased temp. Elizabeth, by Charles Moore of Stratton, from Sir Edward Griffin, Knt. The family is now represented by George Moore, of Appleby-Parva, Esq., grandson of George Moore of Appleby, and Elizabeth his wife, daughter and heiress of William Darker, Esq." They were also borne by the Lord Mayor of London in 1682. According to the State Land Office, Lambath Moore received a grant in Lancaster county in 1658, and three individuals, bearing the name Augustine Moore, received grants at periods distant from each other—the first in Elizabeth City county in 1672, the next in King William county in 1723, and the last, Augustine Moore, Jr., in Spotsylvania county in 1728. There are grounds for belief that they represented three successive generations. The editor has a book-plate in his possession of Lambath Moore, bearing the same arms as those of Augustine Moore of Chelsea. He has also a volume formerly belonging to John Moore, the Royalist of the Revolution (son of Henry Moore of New York), with a book-plate of the same arms. John Moore was doubtless of the same lineage. It is probable, that the Moore family of Virginia, later of "Chelsea," was founded by John Moore, an "old planter, before 1625." According to family papers formerly belonging to Colonel William Aylett, of "Fairfield," King William county, Va., Deputy Commissary General of the State Forces of Virginia during the Revolution, Colonel Augustine Moore, of "Chelsea," as above, "was a son of Basil, the son of Thomas Moore, who married a daughter of Sir Basil Brooke. There was a tradition among the older Moores, connecting Colonel Augustine Moore, of 'Chelsea,' King William county, Va., with Sir Thomas More, of 'Chelsea,' England. John More, the only son of Sir

tain Nathaniel West Dandridge of the British Navy, son of Captain William Dandridge of Elson Green.¹

Promoted Major General, and on the eve of embarking with troops destined for Carthage,^m Spotswood died at Annapolis on the 7th of June, 1740.ⁿ There is reason to believe that he lies buried at Temple Farm, his country residence near Yorktown, and which was so called from a sepulchral building erected by him in the garden there. It was in the dwelling house at Temple Farm (called the Moore House) that Lord Cornwallis signed the articles of his capitulation.

The widow of Governor Spotswood surviving him, and continuing to reside at Germanna, married, secondly, Nov. 9th, 1742, the Rev. John Thompson, of Culpeper county, a minister of

Thomas More, had five sons; i. Thomas (the elder); ii. Augustine; iii. Edward; iv. Thomas (the younger); v. Bartholomew."

In the family graveyard at Chelsea is the tomb of the first wife of Augustine Moore, with the following inscription:

"Here lyeth ye body of Mary, the wife of
Mr. Augustine Moore, who departed this
Life the ——— day of — - 1713."

1 Campbell's Genealogy of the Spotswood Family of Scotland and America.

m Preparatory to his departure he advertised in the *Virginia Gazette*, in 1739, to sell in April following his household furniture, a coach, chariot ("which has been looked on as one of the best made, handsomest and easiest chariots in London"), chaise, coach-horses, house-slaves, etc.; to lease his lands in Orange, reserved for his own seating, and gives notice that he is ready to treat for farming out for twenty-one years, Germanna and its contiguous lands, with the stock thereon, and slaves. Also, for farming out, for a like term, an extraordinary grist-mill and bolting-mill, lately built by one of the best mill-wrights in America, and both going by water, taken by a long race out of the Rapidan.

n By the kindness of his friend, Professor Otis Frederick Manson, M. D., Richmond, Va., whose deceased wife was a descendant, in the fourth generation, of Governor Alexander Spotswood, the writer has been allowed the privilege of examining contemporary copies of the wills of Governor Alexander Spotswood, and of his son, John Spotswood, which are in the possession of Professor Manson. By the will of Governor Spotswood, dated April 19th, 1740, the bulk of his estate is left to his eldest son, John, to whom also, upon the death of the relict of Governor Spotswood, the family plate, weighing more than 1,080 ounces, reverted. To his son Robert, he gives the sum of £3,000 sterling, and to each of his daughters £2,000 sterling. Consistent in his appreciation of the value of his iron works at Germanna, he distinctly and repeatedly enjoins the retention of that property by his heirs, and a due provision for its manufacturing

exemplary character. The descendants of Governor Spotswood in Virginia are now represented, in addition to the names already given, in those of Aylett, Braxton, Brooke, Berkeley, Burwell, Bassett, Chiswell, Carter, Campbell, Callaway, Cullen, Claiborne, Dandridge, Dangerfield, Dabney, Fairfax, Fontaine, Gaines, Gillingham, Kemp, Kinlock, Lloyd, Lee, Leigh, Macon, Mason, Manson, Marshall, Meriwether, McDonald, McCarty, Nelson, Parker, Page, Randolph, Robinson, Smallwood, Skyring, Taliaferro, Temple, Thweatt, Taylor, Walker, Waller, Wickham, Watkins, and others, scarce less esteemed.

efficiency. Constant also in his regard for learning, he bequeaths to the ancient College of William and Mary, all of his "books, maps and mathematical instruments." He appointed his wife, Butler Elliott Bengier, his cousin, and the Rev. Robert Rose as executors of his will. The last, a learned and pious divine, and manifold useful citizen of the Colony, lies buried in the church yard of the venerable St. John's church, Richmond, beneath a handsome altar-shaped tomb of white marble, bearing a lengthy inscription in testimony of his virtues and his worth.



TABLE OF CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
1710. June 20-Aug. 16.—Diary recording the arrival of Gov. Spotswood in Virginia, and his official acts.....	1
1710. Aug. 16.—Letter to the Bishop of London, reporting the dissolute conduct of Rev. Mr. Faber, the induction of Rev. Mr. Skaife, and giving some account of Hungars parish.....	4
1710. Aug. 16.—Letter to William Blathwayt, Esq., offering to furnish information of the revenue of the Colony.....	5
1710. Aug. 18.—Letter to the Commissioners of Trade, London, announcing his arrival in Virginia; giving account of the government of the Colony, and reporting the publication of his proclamation "relating to the liberty of the subject; the conduction of the Revenue service; regulations regarding the granting of land; violation of the Custom laws, and proposing measures of prevention; recommending the building of a fort at Point Comfort, and giving information as to the price and prospective crop of tobacco.....	6
1710. Aug. 18.—Letter to the Earl of Sunderland, reporting the condition of the Colony.....	13
1710. [Aug. 18.].—Letter to the Commissioners of the Customs, of a similar tenor to that of Aug. 18, to the Commissioners of Trade	14
1710. Aug. 24 to Sept. 26.—Diary of official acts.....	16
1710. Oct. 23.—Letter to Mr. Blathwayt relating to the Quit-rents of the Colony.....	17
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to the Council of Trade; reporting violation of the Customs, giving some account of the suffrages of the Colony, and of its parochial regulation; recommending the establishment of iron works, and of a postal service; relating to the boundary line between Virginia and Carolina, the granting of land, the establishment of the Courts of Oyer and Terminer, and of treaties with the Indians.....	18
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to the Bishop of London, relating to the Church Establishment, and requesting a better provision of clergymen.....	26
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to the Earl of Sunderland, transmitting the Journals of the Council, and his proclamation.....	28

	PAGE.
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to Collo. Blackstone, of courtesy.....	29
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to the Commissioners of Customs relating to the revenue service.....	29
1710. Oct. 24.—Letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, recommending the establishment of a dock for the repair of vessels, and requesting guard-ships for the protection of the trade of the Colony.....	33
1710. Dec. 15.—Letter to the Council of Trade, reporting actions of the Assembly, unequal and inconvenient divisions by parishes and counties of the Colony; an uniform attachment and conformity to the Church of England; regulations regarding the granting of land; discoveries made by the recent "Tramontane Expedition;" that the Assembly had failed to take action regarding the making of iron, and proposing that her Majesty take the matter in her own hands and on her own account.....	36
1710. Dec. 15.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth transmitting copies of the laws and journals of the Assembly.....	43
← 1710. Dec. 15.—Letter to Governor Edward Hyde of North Carolina in relation to the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina.....	44
1711. [Undated].—Letter to the same on the same subject.....	45
1711. [Undated].—Letter to the same on the same subject. ...	46
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Council of trade relating to the revenue service, the General Court, the granting of lands, the quit-rents, building of the Governor's house; Acts of the Assembly laying a duty on liquor and the importation of slaves; as to the low price of tobacco, the duty upon it, and the establishment of rolling houses; the granting of probates and administrations; relating to coin and a currency of copper money, and to bastard children.....	49
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Council of Trade, relating to the revenue, to the granting of lands, the quit-rents, and proposing an increase of the salary of the Clerk of the Council.....	60
1711. March 6.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, relating to the revenue service.....	65
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Lords of the Treasury, transmitting the "last half year's account of the revenue of 2s. per hogsheads on tobacco," and reporting the death of Col. Digges, Auditor-General of the Colony.....	66
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Bishop of London, requesting a due settlement of the ministry.....	66
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Lords of the Admiralty, reporting acts of the Assembly regarding deserting seamen.....	67
1711. March 6.—Letter to Mr. Blathwayt, reporting the appointment of Col. Philip Ludwell as Auditor-General.....	69

CONTENTS.

xix

PAGE.

1711. March 6.—Letter to Col. Blakiston, of similar tenor.....	70
1711. March 6.—Letter to the Council of Trade, relating to the grievous duties on tobacco and the consequent distress of the Colonists, who, unable to purchase clothing in England, as formerly, were now manufacturing it themselves of a cloth formed by a mixture of cotton or flax and wool, and requesting for the encouragement of production, the purchase of naval stores from the Colonies.....	71
1711. May 5.—Letter to the Commissioners of the Customs, relating to violation of the revenue service and proposing regulations and officers to prevent it; reporting the appointment of Col. Wm. Waters as Naval Officer of the Eastern Shore, <i>vice</i> Mr. Custis, who resigned; relating to the duty of a penny per lb. on tobacco for the support of William and Mary College.....	75
1711. July 15.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, reporting internal dissensions in North Carolina and his mediation for an accommodation of them, and his purchase of pork by the authority of Col. Hunter, Governor of New York, for use of the expedition to Canada.....	81
1711. July 25.—Letter to the Council of Trade, transmitting the proceedings of the Council in relation to selling the quit-rents; reporting his efforts to suppress illegal trading to the West Indies; proposing reforms in the revenue service; relating to the purchase of pork, the capture of a French ship of war, the dissensions in North Carolina, and requesting a supply of powder for the Colony.....	87
1711. July 28.—Letter to the Council of Trade, reporting his sending troops to North Carolina and suppressing the insurrection there.....	95
1711. July 28.—Letter to the Commissioners of the Customs, reporting the appointment of Mr. Christopher Robinson as Naval Officer of Rappahannock river, <i>vice</i> Col. Corbin, removed; relating to the tonnage of ships according to measurement, and the reports of Collectors and Naval Officers.....	96
1711. July 28.—Letter to the Lords of the Treasury, transmitting account of the quit-rents for 1710, and reporting frauds in the quantity of land taxed, and of purchase of pork.....	98
1711. July 28.—Letter to the Lords Proprietors of Carolina, reporting his intervention to quell the insurrection in that province.....	100
1711. July 28.—Letter to the same on the same subject.....	102
1711. July 28.—Letter to Mr. Blathwayt, relating to the same and to the quit-rents.....	103
1711. July 28.—Letter to the Commissioners for the Sick and Wounded, reporting the capture of the French privateer and the sending of the prisoners taken, to London.....	104
1711. July 28.—Letter to Mr. Warr, of courtesy.....	105

	PAGE.
1711. July 28.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, relating to the disturbances in Carolina.....	105
1711. July 31.—Letter to the same on the same subject.....	106
1711. July 30.—Letter to Lord Rochester on the same subject.....	107
1711. Sept. 5.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, relating to the granting of land.....	109
1711. Sept. 5.—Letter to the Council of Trade, relating to the granting of land, to the quit-rents, and reporting the illegal exaction by the province of South Carolina from Virginians passing through its territory to trade with the Indians.....	110
1711. Sept. 5.—Letter to the Commissioners of the Customs, recommending the appointment of Searchers and Collectors for the revenue service; relating to the duty collected for the support of the College, and reporting the seizure of a ship with smuggled tobacco.....	112
— 1711. Oct. 15.—Letter to the Council of Trade—reporting a massacre on the Southern frontiers by the Tuscaruro Indians, with his measures therein; Baron de Graffendriedt a prisoner.....	115
1711. Oct. 15.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, relating to the same. Complaints of the disaffection of the Quakers to the Government.....	118
1711. Nov. 17.—Letter to the Council of Trade, reporting a Convention with the Tuscaruro Indians for a treaty of peace, with a stipulation of hostages to be educated as Christians, and, relating to the College endowment.....	121
1711. Nov. 11.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, of the same tenor.....	123
1711. Nov. 11.—Letter to the Bishop of London, of the same tenor....	126
— 1711. Dec. 28.—Letter to the Council of Trade, relating to the conversion and education of the Indians, measures for the defence of the Colony; the election of representatives of "mean understandings," and the scanty crops.....	129
1711. Dec. 28.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, concerning the Indian relations of the Colony, and the removal of Baron de Graffendriedt to Virginia with his Colony of Palatines.....	134
1712. Feb. 8.—Letter to the Council of Trade, transmitting the Journals of the Assembly, and reporting differences with the Burgesses as to provisions of defence for the Colony; relating to the revenue service, and requesting that orders be issued to the Colonies of Virginia, Maryland and Carolina to mutually protect each other against the Indians.....	138
1712. Feb. 8.—Letter to the Secretary of State as to the "irregular proceedings of the Assembly," and Spotswood's measures of defence against the Indians.....	144
1712. May 8.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth on the same subjects.....	146
1712. May 8.—Letter to the Council of Trade on the same subject, with reference to the purchase of pork, the settlement of Baron de Graffendriedt in Virginia and disputes as to proprie-	

CONTENTS.

xxi

PAGE.

	torship in the Northern Neck with the agents of Lady Fairfax and of Lord Baltimore, and to irregular practices in taking up land, and requesting the re-instatement of Col. Bassett to his former rank in the Council	148
1712.	May 8.—Letter to the Earl of Oxford, regarding an order received for remitting into the Exchequer £3,000 out of the Quit-rents, and reporting that the fund will not justify a compliance	154
1712.	May 8.—Letter to the Bishop of London relating to the instruction of Indian children, and to the conduct of Mr. LeFevre....	156
1712.	May 8.—Letter to Mr. Blathwayt relating to the remittance of £3,000 out of the Quit-rents; to Mr. LeFevre; fears of an Indian war, and to his purchase of pork.....	157
1712.	May 8.—Letter to Col. Blakiston complaining of neglect of his claim by Col. Hunter for Expenditures for pork, and remitting £600 of the £3,000 ordered from the Quit-rents.....	159
1712.	May 15.—Letter to the Board of Trade, relating to the boundary line between Virginia and North Carolina, and to the discovery of gold and silver mines.....	160
1712.	July 26.—Letter to the Council of Trade, relating to the revenue, to the granting of lands, to the discovery and working of gold and silver mines, the guard-ships, and the capture of a French privateer; to the stores of war in the Colony, the Indian relations, the importation of negroes, the employment of Baron de Graffenriedt for the discovery and development of gold and silver mines, transmitting journals and laws of the Assembly, noting disagreement with that body, the North Carolina troubles and his intervention, and the unjust exactions of South Carolina from Virginia traders with the Indians.....	163
1712.	July 26.—Letter to Lord Dartmouth, relating to the grant to New England and New York of the arms and ammunition designed for the expedition to Canada, and requesting similar provision for Virginia; stating apprehensions from the inroads of the Seneca and Tuscaroro Indians, who had formed a league; transmitting journals and laws of the Assembly.....	172
1712.	July 26.—Letter to the Bishop of London, relating to the education of Indian children, requesting contributions towards this object from the Society for Propagating the Gospel and recommending the employment of Mr. Forbes as a missionary.....	174
1712.	July 26.—Letter to the Arch-Bishop of Canterbury of similar tenor	176
1712.	July 26.—Letter to the Commissioner of the Customs, recommending Col. Richard Lee for the appointment of Collector of the North Potomac.....	178



Letters of Gov. Spotswood.

JUNE 20TH, 1710.—Arrival within the Capes of Virginia in the Bedford man of Warr, Tancred Robinson, Commander.

JUNE 21ST.—Sett out from Kiquotan¹ road in Capt. Lee² of the Bedford Galley, his boat, landed at James Town, and lay that night at Green Spring.³

JUNE 22ND.—A Letter was writt to Collo. Blakiston informing him of Mr. Byrd's⁴ being left out of the Council, supposed to be occasioned by a mistake in transcribing the Instructions, and de-

¹ The Indian town Kecoughtan¹ or Kichotan, the site of the present town of Hampton.

² Colonel Richard Lee, the founder of the distinguished family of the name in Virginia, made repeated voyages across the Atlantic. Perchance this Capt. Lee of the Bedford Galley was of the same lineage.

³ The former seat of Sir William Berkeley, whose widow married secondly Philip Ludwell, but retained her name and title of Lady Berkeley. Rev. John Clayton (supposed to be the father of the Virginia naturalist) writing in 1688, says: "There is a spring at my Lady Berkeley's called Green Spring, whereof I have been often told, so very cold, that 'tis dangerous drinking thereof in summer time, it having proved of fatal consequences to several."

⁴ The second and most distinguished of the three Colonels William Byrd of successive generations. His father, the first of the name and title in Virginia, died Dec. 4, 1704, aged 52 years.

siring him to make application to the Lords Commissioners for Trade to obtain that Mr. Byrd may be reinstated. This Letter was sent open to Mr. Perry,⁵ inclosed in one from W. Robertson, Esq'r,⁶ which it was desired that Mr. Perry would take on him the Negotiation of this affair in case Collo. Blakiston⁷ were out of town.

Letters were writt and dispatched for calling the Council to meet next day for publication of the Commission of Governor.

JUNE 26TH.—I writt to the Governors of New England, New York and Pensilvania to notify my arrival, and sent to the two former, and also to the President of Maryland, some pacquetts from the Lords Commissioners of Trade.

JUNE 28TH.—By a Letter to the Church-wardens of Stratton Major parish, in King and Queen County, I recommended Mr. Skaife⁸ to be their Minister.

JULY 3D.—On receipt of a Letter from Captain Clifton, Commander of her Majesty's Ship, Kingsale, at New York, notifying his intentions of being here by the 10th of this month to take under his Convoy the trade from Great Britain, I writt to the several Naval Officers directing them to clear the Ships accordingly.

JULY 15TH.—I gave further directions to the Naval Officers

⁵ Micajah Perry, Alderman of London, and a prosperous shipowner and merchant.

⁶ William Robertson, Clerk of the Council.

⁷ Nathaniel Blackiston, or Blakiston; governor of the Province of Maryland from January 2d, 1698, until the close of 1701, when on his own solicitation, in consequence of ill health, he was allowed to return to England. He was a man of honor and integrity, and enjoyed in a high degree the affection and confidence of the colonists. After his return to England he was employed as the agent of the Colony of Maryland, to protect its interests with the crown and parliament. It is apprehended that he was the agent of the Colony of Virginia, as well, at the time as above, when addressed by Governor Spotswood.

⁸ Rev. John Skaife, who was still the incumbent in 1724.

for⁹ clearing the Ships till further Order, and to oblige the Masters to give Security to repair to Kiquotan, and not to depart without Convoy.

JULY 27TH.—Upon information from Mr. Lewis Conner, that there were three Cables and a half saved out of the Garland, lying near Corrottock¹⁰ Inlett, I writt to Captain Robinson, Commander of her Majesty's Ship, the Deptford, to send his long-boat, or that of Captain Lee, of the Bedford Galley, to bring off the said Cables, and secure them for her Majesty's use.

JULY 31ST.—Captain Lee informing me by his letter that four of his men were run away and entertained at the house of one Davenport, in Yoacomico, I writt to Collo. Lee,¹¹ Naval Officer of Potomack, to issue his Warrant for apprehending them, and to putt them on board some of the Ships that were coming down to Kiquotan to joine the New York Convoy in order to be putt on board the Deptford, or Bedford Galley, but if no such Opportunity offered, to send them down by land under Guard.

AUGUST 1ST.—I writt to the Justices of New Kent and sent them a new Commission at their desire, w'th ye addition of Mr. Stanup.¹²

AUGUST 10TH.—I writt to Captain Smith, Commander of the Enterprize, in answer to a letter from him (whereby he gave me notice of his arrival), and sent him Captain Robinson's orders for his Cruising between the Capes.

AUGUST 13TH.—Upon advice of Captain Clifton's arrival, I sent Orders to the Naval Officers to hasten the departure of the Ships to joine him, and to clear no more until further order. I writt to Captain Clifton desireing he would putt off his departure two or three days longer than the time he had Limited, (which was next Thursday,) that he might give time for the Potomack Ships to joine him.

⁹ For the regulations governing, and the fees of, Naval Officers, see Hening's Statutes, vol. iii, pp. 195-7.

¹⁰ Now Currituck.

¹¹ Col. Richard Lee, the second of the name in Virginia.

¹² James Stanup, a Burgess from New Kent County, in 1718.

AUGUST 16TH.—I writt the following Letters, viz:

W'MSBURGH IN VIRGINIA, Aug't 16,

1710.

To the Bishop of London :¹³

MY LORD :

The lateness of my arrival in these parts will permitt me to send by this present opportunity of the New York Convoy, little more than my dutifull Respects to your Lord'p, and I hope it will be readily granted that a little more time and acquaintance is requisite to enable me to perform your Lord'p's Commission relateing to the Seeds and plants of this Country. It is with some reluctancy that I here must trouble your Lord'p with a Representation of the conduct of Mr. ffaber, whom yo'r Lordship was pleased to favour with your Recommendation to the College. He consulted me at London about his Voyage, telling me that he had only a Servant maid to carry with him, and according to my advice he went down to Portsmouth a few days before me; but as soon as he gott on board the man of War, that Maid (who is a Young Woman About sixteen years of Age) passed there (as I was afterwards informed) for his wife. What disgust he conceived on board I can't tell, but he and his Wife (or maid) was gone from thence before I gott down, and I saw him no more; however, considering the behaviour of the man, I was not sorry for his staying behind, and I am the better pleased he did so, since I understood that the present Master of the Grammar School is much reformed of late, and that he now gives good satisfaction in his business.

I had the Opportunity immediately upon my arrival to place Mr. Skaife (the gentleman recommended to me by your Lord'p) in one of the best parishes in the Country, where I hope he will find himself very easy. Sometime after Mr. Skaife was settled, I had a letter from the Vestry of Hungars parish,¹⁴ on the Eastern Shore of the Colony, wherein they seem to complain

¹³ Henry Compton, B. D., D. D., Bishop of London, was the youngest son of Spencer, second Earl of Northampton, and was born in 1632. He was a learned and voluminous writer, and died in 1713.

¹⁴ In Northampton County.

very much of one Mr. Dun,¹⁵ their Minister, for leaving them before they can provide themselves of another Minister, and thereby endangering the loss of their Glebe, which is the best in the Country, containing 1500 acres of very good land; for it was given on the condition that if the parish should at any time be without a Minister for six months, the land should then Revert to the heirs of the Donor. Mr. Dun leaves the parish in October, So that if your Lord'p could send them some good man to succeed him in time to save the forfeiture of the Glebe, it would be an extraordinary great kindness to the parish. I have not yet had time enough to informe myself of the State of the Clergy here so as to be able to offer your Lordship my thoughts thereon; but as I have very much at heart the good of the Church, I beg leave to assure Your Lord'p that I shall omit no occasion wherein I can give testimonys of my affection to the Clergy and of my being, with the greatest Respect,

My Lord,

Yo'r Ld'p's, &c.

To William Blathwayt,¹⁶ Esq'r:

SIR:

As my gratitude will oblige me continually to acknowledge the friendly Offices you lately did me in London, so my interest and ambition will make me lay hold on all occasions to cultivate a correspondence with a Person of your Abilitys, and who is so well vers'd in the interest of these Colonys. And I shall always be extremely desirous to have your advice and meritt your approbation in the Conduct of the affairs of this Country. The Correspondence You have with the Auditor and Receiver Gen'll here, will, I hope, make it excusable in me till I

¹⁵ Neither Bishop Meade (Old Churches, &c.,) nor Bishop Perry, (Historical Papers of the Church in Virginia,) make any mention of this minister.

¹⁶ Commissioned by Charles II, in 1680, Surveyor and Auditor-General of all his revenues in America, with a salary of £500, in the payment of which, the share of Virginia was £100.

am better acq'ted with the State of the Revenue, and what immediately comes under your inspection, from offering anything to you on that Subject by this opportunity; but if in that or anything else I can be serviceable to you, I shall be proud of the honour of your commands, Since no man can be with more truth and Respect,

S'r, Yo'r, &c.

AUGUST 17TH.—I writt to ye Justices of Elizabeth City to cause the roads to be Clear'd.

VIRGINIA, W'MSBURGH, August 18th, 1710.

To the Comr's of Trade :

I think it my duty to lay hold on all Occasions of paying my respects to your Lord'ps, and of giving you the best accounts I can of the affairs of this Government, wherewith her Majesty hath been pleased to Entrust me.

At present I have not much to be the Subject of a letter, and can only give Yo'r Lord'ps a bare Relation of the transactions since my arrival, without adding my own Opinion or Observations, since I cannot pretend to do it on so late a knowledge of the Country, with that truth and exactness which I shall always endeavour to observe in my Correspondence with Yo'r Lord'ps.

On the 19th of the last month, The Convoy and fleet wherein I came, arrived safely within the Capes without any accident happening to either, and on the 23d the Council mett, and my Commission was published in the usual manner. It was a Surprize to the Gentlemen of the Council, as well as to my self, to perceive that Mr. Byrd was left out of the Council, considering he had been so lately appointed one of that Board, and that it did not appear that Her Majesty had since conceived any Displeasure against him; but on the Contrary had granted him a particular mark of her Royal favour in augmenting his Sallary as Receiver General. This induced the Council to believe that his not being named in the Instructions could proceed from nothing else than an Omission in transcribing, w'ch might easily happen in regard of the short time, and consequently the hurry wherein they were pre-

pared, between the time of my being appointed Lieutenant Governor, and my coming away. Upon w^{ch}, by the Council's advice, I have admitted Mr. Byrd of the Council till her Majesty's pleasure be known; and I hope your Lord'ps will be pleased not only not to disapprove thereof, but to move her Majesty that he be restored in regard of the personal merit and qualifications of that Gentleman, and the post he holds in the Government by her Maj'ty's favour, which, as it renders him capable, will oblige him in duty to be very useful in promoting her Majesty's Service in the Council, and if it be considered that there are only three at that Board who hold any places of profit in the Government, To Witt, the Secretary, Auditor, and Receiver General, Your Lord'ps will easily believe that a Governor would very unwillingly be deprived of the assistance of either of them who have the same interest and Obligations to promote her Maj'ties Service, and with whom on some occasions he may find it necessary to communicate with more confidence than with any other of the Council, tho' by what I have yet seen, I have no reason to doubt the good inclination of every one of them to do their Duty, and of their Affection to her Majesty's Governm't. The first meeting of Council being spent in publication of my Commission, and issueing the usual proclamation continuing Officers, I found it necessary to have a full Council on the 5th and 6th of Last month. I communicated to them several of her Maj'ties Instructions, wherein I am directed to take their Advice, and beg Leave briefly to hint to yo'r Lord'ps their Opinion and Resolutions thereon. As to that Instruction directing the Sale of the Quitt-rents by inch of Candle,¹⁷ I find that method was altered

¹⁷ "Inch of Candle is the manner of selling goods by merchants, which is done thus: First, Notice is to be given upon the Exchange, or other public place, of the time of sale; and in the meantime, the goods to be sold are divided into lots, printed papers of which, and the conditions of sale are also forthwith published; and when the goods are exposed to sale, a small piece of wax candle, about an inch long, is burning, and the last bidder when the candle goes out, is entitled to the lot or parcel so exposed. If any difference happens in adjusting to whom a lot belongs, when several bid together, the lot is to be put up again; and the last bidder is bound to stand to the bargain, and take the lot whether good or bad. In these cases, the goods are set up at such a price; and none shall bid less than a certain sum, more than another hath before."—*Tomlin's Law Dic.*, 4to., London, 1820, (quoting from *Merchants Dic.*)

several years agoe upon the experience of its being disadvantageous to the Queen's Service, on an account thereof given to yo'r Lord'ps, and that the Quitt-rents have since been sold by the Auditor and Receiver General themselves to better advantage, which method the Council have unanimously advised me to continue. As to her Maj'ties Instructions for regulating fees belonging to the sev'll offices, Directions are given conformable thereunto for the Officers to hang up fair Tables of their fees in their respective offices, and for sending me a Copy of those tables that I may be the better informed whether the fees be within the bounds of moderation, of which I shall give yo'r Lord'ps an account when I have the return of the orders sent.

I have directed a proclamation for publishing her Majesty's Instructions relateing to be liberty of the Subject: but as the Courts of Oyer and Terminer required by that Instruction to be appointed once every half year, I find the Council inclined to be of Opinion that thatt matter is sufficiently provided for by the act establishing the General Court by which the Criminals are appointed to be brought to tryal on the fourth day of every General Court, however that affair is to be further considered in the next Council. As to the Instruction which directs that the Offices of Collector and Naval Officer shall not be executed by one and the same person, The Council have informed me that it is already complied with. That those Offices were separated upon the first giving that Instruction to Collo. Nicholson, and have continued to be executed by Distinct persons ever since, and are so at this time. But as to the office of Receiver of the Virginia Dutys (who also bears the name of Collector here) I find the same hath always been enjoyed by the same persons who are Naval Officers, and the Council have given their Opinion that the Fees belonging to the Naval Officer alone, would not be sufficient encouragement for any one that's capable and fitt to be in so great a trust. Without the addition of the place of Receiver of ye Virginia Dutys, from which last their chief profit does arise, and since it is her Majesty's pleasure that men of Estates and suitable qualifications should only be put in that trust, I hope it will be judged for her Majesty's Service that the same encouragement be continued to them as hath been heretofore, and that Yo'r Lordships will not be displeased that I have (according to the Custome I found here) given the place of

Naval Officer and Receiver of the Virginia Dutys in the Upper District of James River, vacant by the Death of Major Allen,¹⁸ to Mr. Nathaniel Harrison,¹⁹ who has given good Security for the discharge of his Office, and of whom I have received a General good Character both as to his Capacity and diligence.

In Obedience to her Maj'ties commands, I have issued a Proclamation for repealing the act of Assembly for establishing ports and Towns, And I would willingly have comprized in the same Proclamation another act vizt, That concerning the granting, seating and planting lands, &c. which I'm informed continues still in force. Notwithstanding I find in the Council office a Copy of her Majesty's Order for repealing the said Act, attested by Mr. Popple, Yo'r Lord'ps' Secretary. I advised with the Council whether the Copy aforesaid was not a sufficient Warrant for issuing a Proclamation to declare the repeal of that Law; But they were unanimously of Opinion that it was not, and that there had never been any proclamation issued either Confirming or repealing an act of Assembly, except where her Majesty's pleasure had been signified under her Sign Manual and Signett, or by order of her Majesty in her Privy Council, and under the Seal of that Office. Wherefore for avoiding any inconveniencys that may happen Yo'r Lord'ps will be pleased to give Directions that another order be sent in due form as soon as may be.

Pursuant to Your Lord'ps' commands and the information given me in the extracts of the Memorials I had the honour to receive from Yo'r Lord'ps, I have taken care for detecting the persons concerned in carrying on an illegal trade to Curracoa and St. Thomas's, and shall by the next Opportunity give Yo'r Lord'ps a more particular account of my Discoverys in that

¹⁸ Major John Allen. The Allens were early seated in Virginia. The first grant to the name, of record in the State Land Registry Office, is to Thomas Allen of 550 acres in Elizabeth City County, Sept. 14, 1636, Book No. 1, p. 381.

¹⁹ Presumably a brother of Benjamin Harrison, of Surry, who was born in Southwark parish in 1645; was a Member of the Council, Speaker of the House of Burgesses, and died in 1710. His son Benjamin was the father of Benjamin, Signer of the Declaration of Independence, Charles, a general in the Revolution, Nathaniel, Henry, Colin and Carter H. This Nathaniel Harrison later was a member of the Council, and Auditor of the Colony. He died prior to 1737. His daughter Anne married, Aug. 9, 1739, Col. Edward, the eldest son of Hon. Cole Digges, Member of the Council.

Affair. It is very apparent that the want of Guard ships here so frequently, has given great encouragement to the carrying on this Trade, and I am informed it has been the practice for Vessells bound to the West Indies (when they found no man of war in the bay) to take in great quantities of tobacco after they had cleared with the Officer, and by this means they had the Opportunity of easing all that Tobacco at either of those forreigne Ports before they went to the plantation to which they were cleared. I have proposed to the Commissioners of these Customs some means for suppressing that pernicious practice, which is to oblige their Officers in the lower District of James River (from whence this trade is chiefly carryed on) to keep a boat and hands to go on board the plantation Vessells and examine into their Loading. But in my Opinion nothing can more effectually break that trade than the haveing Guard ships constantly attending here, and more especially if (according to what I perceive has been often represented by the President and Council, a sloop or other small Vessell well fitted and mann'd were sent hither to attend the Guard-ship; such a vessell would not only be of the greatest use for suppressing the Enemy's Privateers, but would contribute very much to the preventing illegal Trade, since it would be mighty difficult for any Vessell to go out of the Capes without being examined. And I doubt not Yo'r Lord'ps will be so far satisfyed of the usefullness of such a Vessell that you will be pleased to use your interest with the Lórd's of the Admiralty that one be forthwith sent. I have, with the advice of the Council, issued out Writts for calling an Assembly to meet the 25th of October: the chief business that requires their meeting is the raising money for finishing the Governor's house,²⁰ the payment

²⁰ The building of the governor's house was authorized by the assembly in Oct. 1705, "upon the land bought of Henry Tyler, joyning to the City of Williamsburgh, or upon so many of the next adjacent lotts laid out for the City of Williamsburgh, as to the directory of the said city shall seem most fit and convenient" to the extent of sixty-three acres on the north side of the city, "And that the house be built of brick, fifty-four feet in length, and forty-eight feet in breadth, from inside to inside, two stories high, with convenient cellars underneath, and one vault" with "covering of stone slate." The appropriation for its cost was £3,000. Hening iii, pp. 275-6. October, 1710, the house not being completed, a further appropriation of £1,560 was made, and for the purchase of furniture and laying out gardens, &c., £635, addi-

of the Country's Debts that have accrued since the last Assembly, and the remedying some inconveniencys that have been found in the Laws. The Privateers have proved very trouble some to the Coast this Summer; they have taken a great many Vessells, and kept the Inhabitants about the Capes in continual Alarms after the loss of the Garland and in the absence of the Enterprize, which having gone first to New York to refitt, went afterwards to the Bahama Islands, and is but the other day returned hither. It is a mighty inconvenience that upon any accident to the men of war attending here they are obliged to go to New York to refitt, or, if they want bread or other provisions, they must go there for a Supply, and in their absence the Country is exposed to the insults of every little Privateer, and not any place of Defence, nor one piece of Cannon mounted in the Country to oppose them. The apparent prejudice to her Majesty's Service by this Diversion of our Guard-ships from their proper station obliges me (notwithstanding what I expressed in the beginning of this letter) to offer to Yo'r Lord'ps my humble Opinion that the first inconvenience might be obviated by haveing an Agent here to supply the men of War as well as in the other Colonys, and a place may, with small charge, be fitted up at Point Comfort for careening, where I'm informed the Southampton, a fourth-rate, was careened, when she was Guard-ship here. And as to the defence of the Country, in the absence of Guard-ships, I cannot but be of Opinion that a small ffort built upon Point Comfort²¹ would be of good use, the very name of it would strike an awe in the Enemy, it would afford a Retreat for Ships when pursued by Privateers in time of War or by Pirates²² (which must be ex-

tionally. Hening iii, pp. 482-6. Sir John Randolph in a communication in the *Virginia Gazette*, April 22, 1737, states that the overseer of the work, Henry Cary, who was appointed by the assembly, was discharged, and that Gov. Spotswood undertook its completion, and the amount already expended at that time was "upwards of £6,600 sterling."

²¹ There had been a fort here in the early days of the Colony. Capt. John Ratcliffe, writing Oct. 4, 1609, to the Earl of Salisbury, stated that the colonists were "at work on a fort at Point Comfort."—*Sainsbury Calendar of State Papers*, (1586-1660), p. 8.

²² There is an account of the trial of pirates in the *Calendar of Virginia State Papers* as early as 1694, and Hening's Statutes contain frequent enactment for their suppression and trial. A little later, Edward Teach, who was

pected in time of Peace, whereas there is now no manner of Defence against such attempts; the place for careening her Maj'ties Ship being under the Cannon of it, they could not be surprized by the Enemy in that circumstance, and barracks might be built in it for the reception of the sick men belonging to her Maj'ty's Ships, and thereby their Desertion prevented, which now frequently happens as soon as they begin to recover. The charge of erecting such a fort would be inconsiderable, but as the Country is unable to defray the charge of a Garrison, I humbly propose that her Majesty may be moved to send a Company of the Invalides to do duty in it, which would be no greater expence than they now cost, and for the extraordinary Charge of the Garrison that they be defrayed out of her Majesty's Quitt-rents; and if any Seaman happen to be disabled in the Service here, he may be entered upon the establishment of that Garrison, and there entertained at the same Charge as at Greenwich Hospital. I the rather propose the supplying it with Invalides, because (besides the saving further charges to her Maj'ty) other Soldiers would hardly be kept from deserting either to the Merchants' Service, or dispersing through the Country to better their Circumstances by turning Planters. And if there should be any Danger of the fort being attacked by an Enemy the Garrison might be soon reinforced by throwing in a body of the Militia, who would make a better figure in the Company of experienced Soldiers, and having Walls to befriend them, than I'm afraid they will do by themselves without those advantages. All which I humbly submit to your Lord'ps' better judgement.

Tho' the price of tobacco²³ is fallen so low that it has brought many of the Owners in Debt at London, and lessened the Supplies of goods for their familys, Yet I find the people bear it with much more patience than could be expected from so great

known as Black Beard, and was for a time a resident of North Carolina, was a terror of the Virginia coast. He was vanquished by Lieut. Maynard, who sailed out of Hampton Roads Nov. 17, 1718. He was slain in a hand-to-hand conflict with Maynard, who returned with the head of Teach hung at his bowsprit. To this day superstition accords to Teach the burial of great treasures from his murderous spoils, which are diligently sought along the coast by the credulous.

²³ The price at this period was two pence per pound.

Disappointments, and I'm informed the Crops of tobacco²⁴ this year will be at least equal to what they have been at any time these several years past. These, My Lords, are the most material Transactions that I have to trouble Yo'r Lord'ps with at present, and seeing I have here touched the principal heads of what was treated on in the two last Councils, it may not be so necessary at this time to transmitt the Journals thereof, for the Convoy being to Sail in September, will give me opportunity of sending them with what else may happen in the meantime.

If there remains ought else which I should have now informed Yo'r Lord'ps of, I beg that the lateness of my arrival may plead my Pardon for such Omission, and that this small Tribute of my Duty may be favourably received, as being most respectfully offered by,

My Lords,
Yo'r Lord'ps', &c.

VIRGINIA, August 18th, 1710.

*To the Earl of Sunderland:*²⁵

MY LORD:

Tho' the shortness of my acquaintance in this Country will, I hope, excuse me from giveing Yo'r Lord'p that particular account of the affairs thereof which my Duty obliges me to transmitt, I would not loose this Opportunity of paying my respects to Yo'r Lord'p, and informing you of the chief Transactions since my arrival, which may be necessary for Yo'r Lord'p's knowledge under whose inspection her Maj'ties plantations are to be happily placed.

I am glad I have the honour to tell your Lord'p that I found the Country at peace, and that I observed a good disposition in the people to be quiet and easy, which I shall endeavour by all means to cultivate. I have called the Assembly to meet the 25th of October, finding it for her Maj'ties Service that they should raise money for finishing the house they have begun to

²⁴ The average crop of tobacco at this period was 20,000,000 pounds.

²⁵ Secretary of State.

build for the reception of the Governor, and that it would be no less agreeable to the Country to have an Opportunity of reforming some inconveniencys in their Laws, as well as to receive payment of sundry publick Debts which have accrued since the last meeting of the Assembly. I shall not take up Yo'r Lord's time with enlarging on particulars of less moment, having writt fully thereof to the Right hon'ble the Lords Com'rs of Trade. Nor shall I trouble Yo'r Lord's with the Journals of Council by this accidental Conveyance, since besides that they contain little of moment, I shall have the Opportunity of sending them by the Return of the Convoy from hence, which will sail about the latter end of September, and I hope then I shall be better able from my own Experience and Observation to give Yo'r Lord's a more exact account of the state of this her Maj'ties Colony, where it shall ever be my Study so as to discharge any Trust as that I may meritt Yo'r Lord's protection, and have the hon'r of being esteemed,

Yo'r Lord's.

To the Comm'rs of the Customs :

GENTLEMEN :

I very gladly embrace the Opportunity that is given me by the return of the men of war from New York to pay my respects to Yo'r Hon'rs and to assure you of my fixed Resolution, as occasion offers, to inform yo'r Board of what may be necessary for your knowledge in relation to the trade of this Colony and to yo'r officers here. The short time I have yet had in this Government (which is only since the 20th of last June) hath not furnished me with much to say on this subject at present, so that I have only now to acquaint you that Mr. Allen, the Naval Officer of the Upper District of James River, being dead a few days before my arrival, I have appointed Mr. Nathaniel Harrison to be the Naval Officer of that District, upon the general good Character I received of him, and the reputation he had while he was formerly in that Employment of being a very diligent Officer. He hath given me good security for the

discharge of that trust, and I doubt not he will (according to my directions) take this Opportunity to apply himself to Y^r Hon^{rs} and give you such sincerity as may be to y^r satisfaction. I received from the Right hon^{ble} Lords Com^{rs} of Trade the Extracts of some Memorials relating to an illegal trade carried on with the Island of Carracoa and St. Thomas's, wherein some of the Inhabitants of the lower District of James River have been concerned. I have given the necessary orders for discovering the persons and hope by the next Opportunity I shall be able to inform their Lord^{ps} and yo^r Hon^{rs} more particularly concerning that Affair. In the meantime I would, with Submission, propose to Yo^r consideration whither it may not be necessary to enjoin Your Officer there to keep a boat and hands to enable him to speak with all Vessells going out, and to make a more narrow Search into their Loading, for that District being the most Commodious for the designs of such as intend to carry on an illegal Trade, because of its vicinity to the Capes, it will be necessary that the Officer there have a watchful eye over the Vessells that trade to the West Indies to prevent a practice which I am informed has been too frequent, of taking in Tobacco after their Clearing and by that means running it to either of those forreigne Islands before they go to the port to which they are cleared. This has been the more easy for them to do while the Country has had the misfortune to be without Guard-ships, but as I believe it will be in the power of the Captains of the men of war attending here to be very usefull in preventing this sort of practice, I shall now, upon the arrival of the Enterprize, appointed as Guard-ship, take care to give suitable directions. I find there has been application made from hence to the Adm^{ty} for a Sloop or other Small Vessel or 8 or ten guns, and proportionably mann^d, to pursue the Enemy Privateers among the Flatts, where a man of war can't come at them. If such a Vessel was appointed here, under a diligent Commander, or one that had some suitable encouragement offered him to quicken him in his duty, I am certain she might be very usefull for preventing illegal Trade by speaking with the smallest trading vessels and Examining their Clearings and thereby detecting frauds, and both these Services being so necessary and important I doubt not the Lords of the Admiralty would be prevailed with to order such a Vessel hither, especially if Yo^r Hon^{rs} will be pleased to

use yo'r interest for that purpose ; and if you shall be pleased to consider of any other or more effectual method whereby these abuses may be regulated I beg you will favour me with Yo'r commands that I may be enabled to be more serviceable to her Majesty's interest and the trade of Great Brittain, and to testify with how much respect I am,

Yo'r Hon'rs, &c.

AUGUST 24TH.—Upon receipt of a letter from Collo. Duke²⁶ giving an acco't of some Negroes going away with arms, I writt to him that it was to be feared they were gone too long for any pursuit, but if he heard of any other going off with arms,²⁷ to raise the Militia and pursue them by several Routs.

AUGUST 31ST.—A Letter to Capt. Smith of the Enterprize to send his Boat to fetch off the Garland's Cables from Currotuck, and to view that ship and make Report what guns or stores may be saved and what ye Charge thereof will amount to.

SEPTEMBER 1ST.—A Letter recommending Mr. James McMorran to be Minister of Norfolk parish.

SEPTEMBER 2ND.—A letter to the Church-wardens and Vestry of Hungars Parrish recommending Mr. Patrick Falconer²⁸ to be their Minister, &c.

A letter to the Church-wardens and Vestry of the Upper parish of Isle of Wight, recommending Mr. Alex'r Forbes to be their Minister.

SEPTEMBER 6TH.—I writt to Major Buckner²⁹ to examine

²⁶ Colonel Henry Duke a member of the Council in 1703. He was also a member of the Committee for the revival of the laws of the Colony in 1700.

²⁷ They appear to have meditated insurrection, since the assembly in October 1710, freed "a negro slave named Will, belonging to Robert Ruffin of the County of Surry" for "discovering a conspiracy of diverse negroes in the said county, for levying war in this colony." Hening, iii vol., p. 537.

²⁸ He was the incumbent of Elizabeth City parish in 1724.

²⁹ Major Richard Buckner, of King and Queen County.

Rob't Harris's Complaint w'ch he made ag't his Master, Jno. Marshal, and to report the same to me.

Letters to the Naval Officers to send a List of Ships and acco't of the Trade according to scheme sent.

SEPTEMBER 12TH.—Letters sign'd for calling a Council on the 15th. A letter to Collo. Harrison⁸⁰ to appoint Musters of the Militia of Surry on ye 20th and prince George on the 21st. Also Collo. Byrd to have a muster of Charles City and Henrico on the 22d and 23rd.

SEPTEMBER 18TH.—I writt to Capt. Robinson desiring him to put off the departure of the Fleet till the 15th of October, and sent him a copy of the opinion of the Council on the petition of the M'rs [masters] of Ships.

SEPTEMBER 26TH.—Writt to Mr. Burwell to enquire into the complaint of Hago, a negro woman belonging to Mr. Emanuel Jones, and to report how he finds the same.

A Letter to the President of Maryland recommending Capt. Oard to his favour, who intends to Lead in that Government.

VIRGINIA, October the 23d, 1710.

To Mr. Blathwayt:

SIR:

The departure of the fleet so unluckily while I am wholly taken up w'th the business of the General Court, and preparing for the Assembly, (which is to meet on the 23d,) will allow me little more time than renew to you the professions of my respects, and to beg leave to post pone the writing about business till the next Opportunity after the Assembly's over. I must, however, intreat you will be pleased to use your interest that no new Draughts be made on the Quitt-rents of this Colony till her Maj'tie's gracious intentions for re-building the College⁸¹

⁸⁰ Col. Benjamin Harrison, who was the grandfather of Benjamin Harrison, Jr., the Signer of the Declaration of Independence, etc.

⁸¹ The first college-building of William and Mary, designed to be a square

shall be accomplished, since you will observe by the accounts which Mr. Byrd tells me he sends by this Conveyance, how much that Revenue is sunk by the large Draughts that have been lately made on it and the decrease of the price of tobacco. I have endeavoured to make the Governours of the College sensible how much they already owe to your favour, and they all acknowledge it with the gratitude that becomes them. I hope to be able by my next to offer you some of my thoughts for the improvement of her Maj'tie's Revenues of this Colony, and desire you will believe me to be with great Truth and Respect.

VIRGINIA, October 24th, 1710.

To the Council of Trade:

MY LORDS:

Since my last to Yo'r Lord'ps of the 18th of March, by the Maidstone (of which I here enclose a Duplicate), I have not had the honour of any from Yo'r Lord'ps; so am only now to pursue the relation of the Affairs of this Government where I then left off.

The measures I had proposed to myself for detecting the persons concerned in that illegal Trade to Curracoa and St. Thomas's, by examining the books of the Custom house Officers and comparing the clearings of the Vessells with the Certificates of the Discharge of their Loading in the Plantations, have not given me the Light I expected. So that I am forced to have recourse to the means of finding out and examining the men that Sailed in those Vessells, and am not without hopes of making

when completed, was unfinished in 1700. The House of Burgesses, however, met in it until 1705, when together with its library and philosophical apparatus it was destroyed by fire. The second building was not finished until 1723. In April, 1718, £1,000 was given to its endowment by the Assembly. In May, 1726, it was given £200 per annum out of the duty of one penny per gallon on wine, and in August, 1734, by enactment a duty of one penny per pound on all tobacco exported was levied by the Assembly for its support. *Hening*, vol. iv, pp. 74, 148, 429-30.

During the Siege of Yorktown in 1781, the college building was used as a hospital for the French troops, and one of the wings was destroyed by fire. The entire building was burned Feb. 8, 1859, and having been rebuilt, was fired and destroyed by the Federal army Sept. 9, 1862.

Discoverys sufficient to be the foundation of a prosecution against the offenders, and thereby discouraging a Trade so pernicious to her Majesty's Interest and Service.³² I herewith send Yo'r Lord'ps the Journals of Council in the time of the late President, which I understand have not yet been transmitted. Yo'r Lord'ps will be pleased to excuse me from offering any Remarks on what is contained therein, as being wholly a Stranger to all the proceedings, and besides I am told that Collo. Jenings has from time to time given Yo'r Lord'ps an account of what is most remarkable. Yo'r Lord'ps will likewise receive with this the Journals of Council since my entrance upon the Government, together with the Copys of the Proclamations issued in that time; upon which, having already imparted to Yo'r Lord'ps what is most material, I have little now to add, Except to observe to Yo'r Lord'ps that upon some dissatisfactions I found among the People in reference to her Majesty's late Instruction for granting of Land, and that by false reports they had been led into an opinion that these instructions contained harder terms than they really do; I thought it necessary to prepare a proclamation not only to disabuse the Country as to any false Conceptions they had of her Maj'tie's Royal intentions, but to soften what appeared harsh to them in the Instruction, and to make the alteration proposed therein go down the more easily; but having communicated the proclamation to the Council at their last Meeting, they represented it as a matter of that consequence as would deserve the consideration of a very full Council, in respect of the influence it might have on the minds of the People just upon the Meeting of the Assembly; so it rests at present, and I have not thought fitt to give Yo'r Lord'ps the trouble of perusing it, as being yet imperfect. I cannot yet see what will be the temper of this Assembly, the inclinations of the Country being rendered more misterious by a new and unaccountable humour which hath obtained in several Countys or excluding the Gentlemen from being Burgesses, and choosing only persons of mean figure and character: by what I have yet heard, the business of taking up Land is the Chief Grievance

³² It was a common practice to carry out tobacco in barrels, entered as beef or pork, to conceal it under corn, and to mark the hogsheads with less than their real weights.—*Perry's Papers Relating to the Church in Virginia*, p. 550.

they have recommended to their Burgesses to get redressed. All I can assure Yo'r Lord'ps of as to this or any other of their proceedings is, that if I have not the Dexterity to apply them to her Majesty's service, I shall at least have the courage and honesty to prevent their acting any thing contrary to it.

I have observed, amongst other Causes of the Partys and Factions that arise in this Country upon the Election of Members for the Assembly, There is one like to be very often renewed so long as the Country is in a growing condition, and that is the applications which the People have occasion to make for dividing old and erecting new parishes. This, it seems, hath heretofore been done by Act of Assembly, and the people in their Elections have oftener considered the Disposition of the Burgesses to such particular Designs, than their qualifications for promoting the publick interest. But finding in my Instructions that her Majesty hath given power to her Governor to bound and settle Parishes as he shall think fitt, without even naming the intervention of the Council, I am apt to believe that the Erection or Division of parishes may be a branch of the Crown's prerogative in ecclesiastical Affairs, and indeed if on this occasion to have recourse to her Maj'tie's Governor be the justest application, I am persuaded it will also prove the easiest to the People; forasmuch as the Governor is ever likely to prove the most disinterested Judge in such an Affair, and that he never will have it in his power to Oppress the People by any burthensome Division, of either a new Instruction from her Majesty, or a Law to be passed here, shall limit the number of Tithables to be charged with the maintenance of a Minister: Yet because my Predecessors (tho' they had the same Instruction) have hitherto allowed this matter to be handled and determined by the Assembly, I humbly desire Yo'r Lord'ps' directions therein, for as I resolved never to suffer any encroachments on her Maj'tie's Prerogative, So on the other hand I would very unwillingly be engaged in a dispute with the Assembly unless it be thought worth the contending for. There is a project intended to be handed to this next Assembly³³ for im-

³³ The Assembly failing to take action on this measure, Spotswood himself some four years later, or in 1714, inaugurated the iron industry at Germanna, on the Rappahannock river, with German protestant workmen, who came over with Baron de Graffenreidt.

proven't of the Iron Mines lately discovered in this Country, which upon Tryal have been found to be extraordinary rich and good. It is proposed that the work be carried on at the Publick Charge; That the Assembly raise a Fund for that purpose and have the disposal of the profits thereof when it comes to perfection, for answering the publick expenses of the Government, if the Assembly should proceed so far therein this Session as to prepare an Act for the encouragement of this Work, I hope I may give my Assent to it without infringing her Maj'ty's Instructions, which restrains me from passing Acts of an extraordinary Nature; since I do not at present apprehend any Disadvantage which this may occasion to her Majesty's Service or the Trade of Great Brittain, because the Nation is obliged to import great quantitys of Iron from foreign parts, which if this succeeds may be supply'd from hence, at least if it should be found prejudicial, the Act may be repealed by her Majesty long before it can take any effect here, since they can enter in no part of their Work till they have their Workmen and Materials from England, and here I take occasion to beg Yo'r Lord'ps' favourable interpretation of the earnest endeavours I shall always use in these parts to promote the interest of her Majesty and that of my Mother Country (Great Brittain). So that when it may happen that I yield to the instances of the People and pass here a Law of this nature (which if it be not acceptable to her Majesty, can be null'd ere it become in force), I hope Yo'r Lord'ps will conclude that such a compliance on my part may sometimes be necessary, in order to preserve a good Correspondence with them, and thereby compass some other advantage for her Majesty's Service.

I have for these two months past expected here Mr. Hamilton, who is impowered to settle a Post through this country and the neighbouring Colonys.³⁴ I believe the thing to be very feasible, and shall do all that lyes in my power to encourage a project which may hereafter bring in a considerable Revenue to her

³⁴ By Letters patent from William and Mary bearing date Feb. 17, 1692, Thomas Neale had been empowered to establish a post in the American colonies and to enjoy the same for twenty-one years. Under this privilege the assembly in March, 1693, fixed the rates of postage at three pence for every letter of a single sheet for eighty miles, and four and a half pence for greater distances in the colony. Packets of writs, deeds, &c., were to be rated at eighteen pence for every ounce in weight. *Hening*, vol. iii, p. 112-13.

Majesty, the greatest Obstruction which I apprehend in it is from the want of money fitt for Change, and to pass in paying the postage of Letters: there being now only Tobacco, which is a specie very incommodious to receive small payments in and of very uncertain value. The Commissioners appointed for settling the boundarys between this Colony and Carolina, being lately returned, have delivered me a Journal and report of their proceedings, and since I cannot on this sudden departure of the fleet give Yo'r Lord'ps a better relation of the transactions that have been hitherto in that affair than by the same Journal and Report, I beg Leave to send here enclosed a Transcript thereof with the opinion of the Council thereupon: In which is sum'd up the true conclusions that may be drawn from the Dilatoriness of the Carolina Commissioners and the plain Evidence of her Maj'tie's Right to the Lands in dispute, with an humble Representation to Yo'r Lord'ps of what is thought necessary to be obtained from the Lords Proprietors for her Majesty's Service. I shall use my best endeavors to bring this matter to a speedy Determination and in the meantime lay before Yo'r Lord'ps an account of the several Transactions therein as occasion offers, all I shall observe to Yo'r Lord'ps at present is that the Tract of Land in dispute is of considerable value and worth the claiming being near twenty miles broad between the two contested Limits, and how far it extends in Length Westward no man can tell.

While I was sitting last Fryday in the General Court, I observed several petitions for Land presented, and read there in a strain that seemed to me very extraordinary. For the petitions for Lapsed Land concluded with this remarkable expression, Viz't: That the General Court would give the pet'r a Grant of such Lapsed Land petitioned for, and in the petitions for escheated Land, after setting forth that such a Tract of Land had been found to escheat to her Majesty, the pet'r prayed the General Court to order that a Patent might issue to him for the same; and upon inquiry I found it hath been the practice of the general Court to grant orders accordingly. Whereupon I immediately adjourned the Court, and called a Council. I told them how much I was surprized to see petitions presented to the General Court, and orders passed there in a stile which I thought very derogatory to her Maj'tie's Royal prerogative since no Court could order her Ma'ty to dispose of her own

property, and that the proper applications of Grants of Land⁸⁵ being to be made to her Majesty in the person of her Governor, I could not suffer such petitions to be offered there, nor such orders to pass. They alledged that the proceedings of the General Court in relation to Land were grounded on the late Act of Assembly concerning the granting, seating and planting of Land, &c., which directs how Lands that are lapsed or escheated shall be granted, and that Law being still in force here, the people believed they had a Right to make their application to the General Court, as they are directed thereby. I answered that they knew very well her Majesty had repealed that Law, and believed for that very reason of its invading her Maj'tie's prerogative. That, however, I was not against having petitions brought into the General Court for the more legal traversing of Escheats, or for disputing whether the Land petitioned for was duly proved to be lapsed, but that when the General Court had once decided the Right to the Land to be vested in the Crown, they had done all they had authority to do, and the pet'rs ought then to apply themselves to the Governor for obtaining Grants, and that I hoped the Court would not take upon them to determine anything to the prejudice of her Maj'tie's prerogative upon a Law that they were satisfied was repealed, tho' that Repeal was not formally notified here. At last we came to this Resolution, that the General Court would for this Session, in all Cases of private Rights between Subject and Subject, judge upon that Law as a Law in Force; but that all petitions for Land, and all other cases wherein her Majesty's prerogative may be concerned, should be referred 'till the next General Court, in expectation that

⁸⁵ The earliest mode of acquiring land in the colony was in virtue of five years' service to the London Company, at the expiration of which the adventurer was "set free" and entitled to a "divident" of one hundred acres, which if planted and seated by the building of a house upon it within three years, entitled the planter to an additional hundred acres, if not, it reverted to the crown. Later, each one coming to the colony, or transporting thither, or paying the passage of others, was entitled for himself, each member of his family, or other person thus transported, to fifty acres of land, which was called a "head right," and was transferable. Still later, lands were granted upon the condition of paying an annual "quit-rent" of one shilling for every fifty acres, and of planting and seating within three years.

before then her Maj'tie's order may arrive for repealing that Law in service, or that this Assembly may alter it by preparing another Law fitter for her Majesty's Royal approbation.

And since I am now on this Subject of the granting of Land, I beg Leave to offer to your Lord'ps what hath been urged to me against taking up land as proposed in her Maj'tie's Instruction; which is, that there being Laws past from time to time declaring what is meant by the seating and planting of Land, no new terms of seating can be exacted while those Laws are in force; and that if the late Law concerning the granting, Seating and planting of Land, &c., be repealed, then there will be another revived less beneficial to her Majesty, which is the 20th Act of Assembly, held the 23d day of October, 1666, Entitled An Act declaring what is meant by seating of Land.³⁶ And therefore, for preventing any manner of Argument which may arise upon that Law, after the repealing the other concerning the granting, seating and planting of Land, &c., I humbly propose to your Lord'ps that her Majesty may be moved likewise by her order in Council to repeal that other Act in 1666, which will then leave people no pretence of cavilling or objecting that her Majesty's Instructions are contrary to the Laws in force.

I have again advised with the Council in relation to the Courts of Oyer and Terminer,³⁷ and have, pursuant to her Maj'tie's Instructions, appointed the first Court to be held at Williamsburgh the second tuesday of December, and the Council have advised me to recommend to this Assembly to make the same provision for defraying the charge of the Jurys and Witnesses attending this Court as is made in Tryals of Criminals at the General Court.

³⁶ The declaration is, "that building an house and keeping a stock one whole yeare upon the land shall be accounted seating; that clearing, tending and planting an acre of ground shall be accounted planting, and that either of those shalbe accounted a sufficient performance of the condition required by the pattent." *Hening*, vol. ii, p. 244.

³⁷ Courts of Oyer and Terminer were first authorized in April, 1692, by the General Assembly, for the trial of negroes or other slaves charged with the commission of capital offences. They were to be held in the county in which the offence was committed, upon the commission of the Governor. *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 102-3.

P. S.—Since writing this Letter some nations of our Tributary Indians who live in the contested bounds between this Colony and Carolina have brought me a petition desiring that the Land reserved to them by the Articles of peace made with this Government in 1677,³⁸ may be now laid out for them, which furnishes me with a new argument that the Lands in dispute do of Right belong to her Majesty. For if the Government of Carolina had looked upon that Land to be within their bounds, they would certainly [have] excepted against a Treaty made so soon after their grant, whereby those Indians are declared Tributarys to this Government and to hold their land by patent under the great Seal thereof, upon paying an acknowledgement of three Indian arrow-heads in Token of their Subjection. By virtue of this Treaty those Indians have lived quietly under the protection of this Government and without the least pretension made by Carolina till within these few years this Country hath taken great care to keep that treaty inviolably and several Laws have been made from time to time for the more effectual execution of it, but should it be the fate of those poor Indians to fall within the Government of Carolina, it is much to be doubted whether any of those articles would be kept to them, and Yo'r Lord'ps will easily imagine how much it would exasperate them to find that contrary to a solemn Treaty, upon the faith of which, they have lived quietly so many years, they must now be turned over to new Masters and subjected to new Laws.

I have likewise just now received Mr. Byrd's representation w'ch by this Conveyance he makes to my Lord high Treasurer and w'ch I think proper to transmitt to Yo'r Lord'ps' it being such a proposal as I think cannot but turn to the advantage of the country.

³⁸ Effected by Colonel Herbert Jeffreys, governor of the Colony—by which each Indian town agreed to pay three arrows for their land, and twenty beaver skins for protection, every year.

VIRGINIA, October the 24th, 1710.

To the Bishop of London :

MY LORD :

Since my Letter of the 16th of August, I have had the hon'r of one from Yo'r Lord'p, by Mr. Falconer, who, together with Mr. Forbes and Mr. M^cmorran, arrived here about the latter end of August in the Triton's prize. I desire Yo'r Lord'p to be assured that I receive all yo'r commands with pleasure; but more particularly yo'r recommendation of Mr. Falconer, since by serving him I had the opportunity of supplying the parish of Hungars, and thereby preventing a trouble which I had requested of Yo'r Lord'p in my last, of sending a Minister for that parish. Mr. Forbes,²⁹ the other Clergyman sent for this Country, is also provided for in one of the best parishes that was vacant, and Mr. M^cmorran has chosen to settle here rather than go to Maryland, or accept of the office of Chaplain of the Deptford, of which Yo'r Lord'p had given him his election, and I have been willing to encourage this, his inclination, because he has made choice of a parish where his Labour may be more usefull than in any other place of the Country, it being a poor parish and for a long time without a Minister, which has given occasion to a Presbyterian preacher to set up a Meeting house, where a great many of the People begin to resort, but more for the sake of hearing Sermons (of which they are deprived at their own Church) than any inclination to the Doctrine or principles of the Dissenters; it being observable that though in former vacancys of that Parish, several of the Parishoners have gone to the Meeting, Yet whenever they have had the happiness of an Orthodox Ministry, they have all returned to the Church : But tho' this Disposition be pretty General among the Virginians, and that it is a peculiar blessing to this Country to have but few of any kind of Dissenters, yet I presume Yo'r Lord'p will agree with me that any long disuse of the Doctrine may prove too Dangerous a Tryal of their steddiness in our Church, and I am sorry to find it necesssarily happens in 6. or 7 parishes where Tobacco is so mean that a Parson can-

²⁹Rev. Alexander Forbes was the incumbent of the upper parish of Isle of Wight County, in 1724.

not subsist, and I have but small hopes of redressing this evil by the assistance of the People so long as their own necessities press them more sorely, than to be sensible of the wants of the Minister; but Peace and a little time will, I hope, alter their unhappy Circumstances, and enable this Country to make more suitable provision for the Clergy. In the meantime I, with submission, offer to Yo'r Lord's consideration that the Society for propagating the Gospel may be moved to contribute something for the encouragement of Divines to settle in those few Parishes, where their Labour may perhaps prove more beneficial to the established Religion by hindring greater numbers of Souls from leaving the Communion of our Church than so many Missionaries elsewhere will ever be able to convert and bring over to it. As to induction, which Yo'r Lord is pleased to mind me of, I enter heartily not only into that, but even into all other just encouragements which shall ever lye in my power to give the Clergy. But I hope Yo'r Lord will judge is advisable, that by how much this Practice has been neglected by my Predecessors in this Government, with so much the more Caution I am to proceed in the reviving it here, and that as yet it may be too dangerous for me, whilst a stranger, to attempt. Wherefore I beg Yo'r Lord's patience till I can establish myself more in the People's favour, and prepare their minds to submit to what they at present seem averse to, as thinking some Injunction ought rather to be laid on the Pastours not to forsake their Flocks, for it is observable that those Shepherds here oftener leave their Sheep than that the Sheep aim at changing their Shepherd; and indeed since the last offence given in that particular is charged on the Clergy side (meaning the affair of Hungers parish, where neither Induction nor the request of the Parishioners could prevail upon their Parson to stay), It may not be amiss to allow a little time to wear off the freshness of this passage. In the meanwhile I do not see but that all Ministers of good Life and Conversation are upon as sure a Foot here as if they were inducted, for not only the people are well affected to the Church and desirous of its preachers, but also the Government interposes whenever a Parish has offered at any unreasonable removal of their Minister. I shall conclude with doing justice to this Country as far as my Discoverys have hitherto been able to reach, and declare sincerely to Yo'r Lord's

that I have observed here less swearing and Prophaneness, less Drunkenness and Debauchery, less uncharitable feuds and animositys, and less Knaverys and Villanys than in any part of the world where my Lot has been, and whether the natural Cause of this blessing be the people's living under less worldly Temptations, or being more obedient to their Spiritual Pastours, or that they are more dexterous in concealing from me their Vices, I will not as yet pretend to decide, but resolved I am, whether this be the real or my imaginary State of Virginia, that such an one shall be sincerely encouraged here so long as her Majesty shall think me worthy of serving in this Station; hoping that by such steps I shall demonstrate myself to be,

My Lord, &c.

VIRGINIA, October 24th, 1710.

To the Earl of Sunderland :

MY LORD :

The return of the Convoy from hence gives me the pleasure of renewing to Yo'r Lord'p those accounts of the Transactions of this Government, which I am directed by her Majesty's Instructions to transmitt by all safe opportunitys, Tho' at the writing of my last to yo'r Lord'p of the 18th of August (whereof I send enclosed a Duplicate) I believed I should have something to lay before your Lord'p worthy of your notice; yet I find all I have at present to trouble Yo'r Lord'p with is contained in the Journals of Council and the Copys of proclam'n here inclosed; wherein there being nothing that deserves a particular observation, I will not take up that time which Yo'r Lord'p imployes so much more profitably, in entertaining Yo'r Lord'p with the particulars thereof, but shall only beg Leave to conclude with the professions of my being with great respect,

My Lord, &c.

VIRGINIA, October 24th, 1710.

To Collo. Blackstone :

SIR :

I have just time enough from the hurry of business in the General Court and the preparation for the Assembly to inform you that I am well, notwithstanding the Country hath proved very sickly this Fall, and all my family (even the Doctor himself) have shared in it. I shall postpone writing to you of business till I have more Leisure, after the Assembly is over, when I expect I shall have occasion to trouble you with some of the Affairs that will be under their deliberation, and make amends for the shortness of this Letter by the length of one then. However, I must not end this without assuring you of my being,

&c.

VIRGINIA, October 24th, 1710.*To the Com'rs of the Customs :*

GENTLEMEN :

According to what I writt Yo'r Hon'rs in my last of the 16th of August, I have endeavoured to inform myself whether any Discoverys could be made of the illegal Trade complained of from the Lower District of James River to St. Thomas's and Curracoa ; but having received no satisfaction by examining the Collector and Naval Officer's book, I am still the more confirmed in the opinion of the necessity there is for searching the plantation Vessells after they are cleared, since it seems the Masters have so many occasions to make their Oaths of no Effect, and if your Collector in that District have not an allowance for keeping about for that purpose, I hope you will please either to give him orders therein, or appoint some other officer in the nature of a Searcher that may more carefully attend that business. I have advised with the Council here, and find them unanimously of opinion that the most effectual way to prevent this fraudulent Trade will be by having the Vessells searched,

and I intend to discourse Collo. quarry⁴⁰ about it on his return from Carolina, where he is lately gone. In the mean time, I shall continue my Enquirys into the frauds complained of, and am not yet without hopes of getting so much Light into it from the men employed in the Vessels as to ground a prosecution on.

Collo. Wilson⁴¹ who has been for several years Naval Officer of

⁴⁰ Colonel Robert Quarry, Collector, and formerly a member of the Council.

⁴¹ This was Colonel William Wilson. His tomb was formerly in St. John's church-yard, Hampton, Va., but was destroyed by the Federal soldiers during our late war. The inscription was as follows:

[Arms: Sa. on a cross, engrailed between four Cherubims or, a human heart of the first, wounded on the left side proper, and crowned with a crown of thistles, vert.]

"Under this stone lyes the Body of Capt.

Willis Wilson, who departed this life the
19th day of November, in the year 1701; it
being the 28th year of his age.

The Memory of the just is Blessed. Prov.: 10.

May his memory be recorded in Everlasting
remembrance.

Under this also lyes the Bodies of Colonel William
Wilson, and of Jane his wife, Parents of this before
mentioned Capt. Wilson. The said Colonel
Wilson died June 17, 1713, aged about 67
years, and his said wife in May 5, 1713,
Aged about 53 years, and left an only
daughter surviving."

Colonel William Wilson was a wealthy and influential land-holder of Elizabeth City County, of which in 1693 he was High Sheriff. His descendant, the accomplished genealogist, Wilson Miles Cary, Esq., Baltimore, Md., thinks that he was a son of the Rev. John Wilson, first rector of Elizabeth River parish, Norfolk County, Va., in 1637, and evidences, as confirmatory of his conclusion, a patent of land, of record in the State Land Office at Richmond, of 75 acres, to "Anne Wilson, relict of Rev. John Wilson, of Elizabeth City" county, in 1669, and one of 1083 acres on Lower Currituck, Norfolk County, to James Wilson (a brother of Colonel Wm. Wilson), in 1688, and one for 1000 acres on Curle Creek, on Elizabeth River, to Col. William Wilson in 1691.

Col. William Wilson had two daughters—Mary and Jane (of whom see note, Nicholas Curle). Mary, the survivor mentioned in the Epitaph, is said to have been a very beautiful woman. Her brother, Willis, died without issue. She was three times married—1st, to William Roscow, in 1695; 2d, to Col. Miles Cary, in 1702; and 3d, to Dr. Archibald Blair, about 1720.

Wm. Roscow, her first husband—"Gentleman," as his fine armorial tomb

the Lower District of James River, finding his age and infirmitys render him unfitt for the discharge of that Office, has resigned it and I have on that account been willing to oblige him in appointing one (Mr. Nicholas Curle⁴²) to succeed him on his own recommending. He is a person of good parts and diligence, and lives the most convenient of any one thereabouts, So that I am in great hopes that the affairs of that District will be managed more exactly than they have been of late through the infirmitys of Collo. Wilson and the weakness of the Collector. I have received very

recites—"was born at Chorley, Lancashire, England, Nov. 30, 1664, and died on his estate at Blunt Point, in ye County of Warwick, Va., Nov. 2d, 1700." He left three sons: Wilson, *a. s. p.*; Willis died in infancy, and William, who died in 1753, leaving an only son, James Roscow, for whose relief the General Assembly of Virginia passed an act in 1768 to dock the entail of his property.

Colonel Miles Cary, of "Richneck," Warwick County, whose first wife, Mary, daughter of Col. Thomas Milner, of Nansemond County (Speaker of the House of Burgesses), died without issue October 27, 1700; married the widow Roscow in 1702. He was the third son of Colonel Miles Cary, of the Council under Sir Wm. Berkeley; Clerk of the General Court, 1691-2; Member of the House of Burgesses and Chairman of all its important committees, 1693-99; a prominent member of the committee to revise the laws; one of the original trustees of William and Mary College in 1693, and at one time its Rector; Naval Officer of York River, and Surveyor General of Virginia at the time of his death—posts which he had held many years. He died Feb'y 17, 1709, leaving two sons: Col. Wilson Cary, of "Ceelys," and Miles Cary, of "Carys-brooke," and two daughters, Mary (Mrs. Joseph Selden) and Anne, *d. s. p.*, wife of Colonel — Whiting. By this second marriage Colonel Wilson's name has been perpetuated through many generations of Carys, Seldens, Nicholases, Fairfaxes, Nelsons, Carrs, Breckenridges and Swanns.

Dr. Archibald Blair, of Williamsburg, the third husband of the widow Cary, was the brother of Commissary James Blair, of William and Mary College, and the father of Hon. John Blair, President of the King's Council, and who as such at one time was acting Governor of Virginia. The son of the last of the same name was one of the first judges of the United States Supreme Court. Dr. Archibald Blair died in 1736, without issue by his second wife; and Mary (Wilson-Roscow-Cary) Blair, having survived her three husbands, died January 11th, 1741, and lies buried near her first spouse at Blunt Point.

⁴² The family of Curle was quite numerous at one time in Elizabeth City County, and its settlement there was apparently in the last quarter of the 17th century. Doubtless "Curl's" Neck, in Henrico County, derives its name from one of this family, who owned that estate prior to its coming into the possession successively of that Colonel Nathaniel Bacon who has been denominated as "the rebel"; of the Randolphs, and of the Pleasantses. At the site of the

good security of Mr. Curle for the discharge of his Trust and I question not he will give the like security to Yo'r Board.

I have given strict orders to all the Naval Officers to send duly the Lists and invoices required by their Instructions, and if Yo'r Hon'rs find any failure therein, upon the first notice you

Earliest Church, Kiccoughtan—now Hampton—is still to be found in perfect preservation a tomb with inscription as follows:

[Arms: Vert on chevron between three fleur de lys, or cinque foil gu. Crest, on a mount vert, a hedge hog.]

"In hope of a Blessed Resurrection,
Here lyes the Body of Thomas Curle,
Gent., who was born Nov. 24th, 1640,
in the Parish of St. Michael, in Lewes, in the
County of Sussex, in England, and Dyed
May 30th, 1700.

When a few years are come, then I shall
goe the way whence I shall not Returne.

Job: 16, 22."

The earliest mention of the name Curle which the records, now extant, furnish, occurs in 1693, when Pascho Curle gives bond as High Sheriff of Elizabeth City County, with his brothers, Samuel and Thomas Curle, as sureties. The latter, who died without issue in 1700, as above, was a near relative, and left his estates to Pascho (who *d. s. p.* in 1701) and Joshua, sons of Pascho Curle. Colonel Nicholas Curle, of the text, the eldest son of Pascho Curle, married Jane, the second daughter of Col. William Wilson. He died Aug. 15, 1714. His eldest (if not only) son, Wilson, born Dec. 18, 1799, married Priscilla, daughter of Andrew and sister of David Meade (the grandfather of Bishop William Meade), and died in June, 1748, leaving six sons and two daughters: Wilson Roscoe, born 1732; David Wilson, *d. s. p.*, 1770; Nicholas Wilson, Lieut. R. N., *d. s. p.*, 1771; Andrew, Hamilton, and William Roscow Wilson Curle, a member of the Virginia Convention of 1776; Judge of the Admiralty and of the first Court of Appeals of Virginia; died between 1783-8, leaving an only daughter, Eliz'h Kitto Curle. He was twice married. His first wife died in 1774; he married secondly Mrs. ———, widow of Walter Lyon, of Princess Anne Co.

Colonel Wilson Roscow Curle, of "Pasteurs," Elizabeth City County, married Lockey Langhorne, and died leaving an only child, Elizabeth Scarborough Wilson, who married in 1810 Colonel Miles Cary, of "Oak Hill," Fluvanna County (a descendant in the fifth generation of Colonel William Wilson, of the text). His line is now represented by his two grand-sons, Hunsdon Cary, of Memphis, Tenn., his cousin, Wilson Miles Cary, of Richmond, Va., and the sister of the last, Hattie, the wife of William, the son and heir of William

shall please to give me, I shall take care to quicken them in their duty, or put in others that shall be more exact.

I send inclosed the Registers of the Vessells that I have signed since my entring on the Government, and some in the time of the late President which I am told are all that have been registered since the last he transmitted to Yo'r Board.

VIRGINIA, October 24th, 1710.

To the Admiralty:

MY LORDS:

I beg leave to return the grateful acknowledgements of this province in general, with mine in particular, which by this occasion I offer to your Lords'ps for the needful provision you have lately made for the defence of this Colony; by the arrival of the Enterprize from the Bahamas about the beginning of August and of the Triton's prize the latter end of that month. The Deptford and Bedford Galley (which I came in with last June) proved a seasonable Relief to this Colony for I found the people for want of Guard-ships labouring under frequent Alarms and terrible apprehensions, sadly discouraged by the Inults and Damages of the Enemy's Privateers, and vext to stand often helpless Spectators of their own Losses; but now it is an extraordinary Satisfaction to me and to the whole Colony, to see all those uneasinesses removed by two Ships so proper for this Coast, and under officers who seem well pleased with their Station. And we beg Yo'r Lord'ps to continue after this manner your pro-

Albert Christian, M. D. (a successful and beloved practitioner), of "Craigton," Henrico county.

The will of a Wilson Curle is proved in July, 1792, in Elizabeth City County. He only mentions a daughter, Elizabeth (to whom he bequeaths "Briarfields"); his sister Elizabeth, and his relative Wilson Wallace. His executors, Wm. Langhorne, the elder, Richard Cary, and Maurice Langhorne. Mrs. Lockey (Langhorne) Curle died in Tennessee subsequent to 1845, at an advanced age. Mrs. Jane, the widow of Nicholas Curle, was twice married after his death. Her second husband was James Ricketts, and her third — Sweeney. Nothing is known to the present writer of the descendants (if any) of these marriages.

tection to a country and trade which is of so great consequence to her Majesty and the Kingdoms of Great Britain.

It remains that I humbly represent to Yo'r Lord'ps one inconvenience, by reason whereof this Colony do's not enjoy the protection of its Guardships and Convoys so effectually as Yo'r Lord'ps may perhaps imagine, which is, that victualling and careening have hitherto been an indisputable occasion for any of her Maj'tie's Ships to go to New York; during which voyage they are of no use to us here. The first may at all times be supplied if Yo'r Lord'ps will be pleased to direct that an Agent Victualler be appointed for the ships of war in this Colony, which will then find as great plenty of provisions at Kiquotan as at New York, tho' perhaps they may not find the former a Station so entertaining. And for the conveniency of Careening, there is a place at Point Comfort which with a small charge may be fitted up for that Purpose, where her Majesty's Ship, the Southampton, careened when attending this Government, and is capable of receiving the largest Ships of War, which Her Majesty will have occasion to send here as Cruisers or Convoys.

I shall conclude this head with an observation which I have had the opportunity to make in the short time I have been here, that last August, when the Kingcale and Maidstone came hither in their way to Europe from New York (where there is constantly two Guard-ships and an Agent to supply them) they brought only one ship with them bound for Great Brittain, and yet carryed out of this Country about thirty sail, tho' that Convoy may be reckoned only as accidentall: By which Yo'r Lord'ps will perceive the great disproportion between the Trade of this Colony and that of her Maj'tie's other plantations, and of how much importance it may be to her Maj'tie's service that her Ships of war be as little diverted as possible either on the account of clearing or victualling from a place where they have so great a charge. I send enclosed an Inventory of such stores saved out of her Maj'tie's Ship, the Garland, as have been brought hither from North Carolina by Capt. Smith, Commander of the Enterprize, according to an order I gave him for that purpose. I was in great hopes he might have been able to have saved the Guns and Ordnance Stores, but it was so long before I had any notice of the condition of that Ship, that before Capt. Smith got thither, the Weather and the Country People had broke her

to pieces, and the latter had carried away whatever was portable. The Guns, by the breaking up of the Decks, were fallen into the hold and sanded, where he was forced to leave them, not being able to fix on the Wreck anything to raise them by without staying later than the season of the year would permit him to ly in so dangerous a place. There is no doubt but many more of the Stores were saved, and some of them of the best value putt into the hands of one Swan, a Collector in Carolina, but there's no account to be had of them now, neither is it in my power, nor in the power of any body else that I know of in these parts to recover any part of what has been so embazelled in a Country where there's scarce any form of Government. I find that upon the first notice of the Loss of the Garland, the Government here hyred a Sloop and men to be sent for saving and bringing in ye stores, but upon Capt. Cook's giving an account how impracticable it was in a place so dangerous at that season of the year, it was not thought advisable to attempt it. Yet the Sloop and men being continued for some days in pay, there hath arisen several Charges which are yet unpaid. And likewise the beginning of last Summer, when her Maj'tie's Ship, the Enterprize, came in hither very much shatter'd by a Storm, and wanting Cordage to refitt, Capt. Smith had some of the Garland's Cordage for the use of that Ship, (of which I expect a particular account as soon as he returns from cruising;) and several persons were employed to transport over Land from Carolina, who are not yet satisfy'd for their trouble. I have directed the acco'ts to be brought in, and shall by the next opportunity send them to Yo'r Lord'ps, and do now pray Yo'r Lord'ps' directions how the people employed in those Services, as well as the Salvage to the few that shall be found to have acted honestly in the preservation of the Stores, shall be paid, and that Yo'r Lord'ps will be pleased to give order for the disposal of what is saved and brought hither. If I have proved to have taken up too much of Yo'r Lord'ps' time, I beg Yo'r Lord'ps' favourable interpretation of my Endeavours which shall always be to promote with my utmost care her Maj'tie's Service, and to testify with what profound Respect, I am—

VIRGINIA, December 15th, 1710.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS :

By an Express from New York which arrived here yesterday, I had the honour to receive Yo'r Lord'ps' of the 17th of May, and 28th and 30th of August past, with the papers therein referr'd to, and take the opportunity of the Return of the Express to inform Yo'r Lord'ps that the Assembly of this Colony, broke up the 9th instant after having passed fifteen publick and two private Acts, in which, and in the other affairs that have been before them, they have shewed a due Regard to her Maj'tie's Service, and given proofs of that good correspondence which I have had the good fortune to cultivate with them. Whereof I doubt not Yo'r Lord'ps will receive further satisfaction when the Laws and other proceedings shall come to your hands. There is one thing in which I have not been able to surmount the private interests of particular Members of the House of Burgesses, and that is the making a more equal Division of the Countys between York and James Rivers. I gave Yo'r Lord'ps in my last an account of the inconveniencys I had observed to arise by permitting the division of parishes to be treated of in the Assembly, and the influence I perceived it had on the Election of Representatives, but having at the beginning of this Session received petitions from the Inhabitants of a very small County on James River praying an addition of part of an adjoining County lying more commodious to them than to the rest of the County to which it now belongs, I thought it a fitt time to try the temper of the House of Burgesses in that particular, and did w'th ye unanimous concurrence of the Council propose such a Division of the sev'll Countys between those two Rivers as would have made them all very commodious for the Inhabitants, and pretty near on Equality in their Tithables and consequently in their County Levys and publick Charges, but when this came to be debated in the House of Burgesses the private ends of the Representatives of those Countys overswayed the publick benefitt of the People, and more particularly through the diligence of one Leading man, who by the alteration proposed would have lost many of his old friends that had voted

for him in former elections, and got others into his County, of whose friendship he was no ways confident, that project came to be rejected; upon which I humbly take leave to represent to Yo'r Lord'ps the many inconveniencys under which the people labour in diverse parts of the Country for want of a due regulation of their Countys and parishes, and the little hopes there is of being relieved by their Assemblies, who, besides their private interests, are so fond of their old Customs and Constitutions that they are afraid to make any alterations, tho' apparently for the better. At the first settlement of the Country, people seated themselves along the banks of the great Rivers and knew very little of the inland parts beyond the bounds of their own private plantations, being kept in awe by the Indians from vent'ring farther; neither had they any correspondence than only by Water, and this continuing for several years till the people began to grow numerous and necessity obliged them to have Courts for the administration of Justice; the principal settlements gave denomination to the several Countys and the Inhabitants of other places associated themselves with those Countys to which they lay most convenient and fixed Court houses in such places as were then most accessible, according to which disposition the Countys next the mouth of James River, tho' at that time best peopled, being bounded by other Settlem'ts, are extremely small and never will have an opportunity of enlarging their bounds, while the upper Countys have extended themselves to an extravagant length along the sides of the Rivers as they now are, afterwards when the more Inland parts of the Country came to be inhabited and roads were made from one River to another, tho' they discovered the inconvenience of that establishment, yet the unwillingness they found in many people to alter what they had been long accustomed to, and perhaps the like private ends, as now prevail, disappointed the attempts that have been made for a more equal Division, untill, at last, those inconveniencys are become intolerably burthensome to the Country. Some Countys are now ninety miles in length and the Inhab'ts obliged to travell 30 or 40 mile[s] to their own Court House, tho' they live within six miles of the Court House of another County. Some of those Countys have 16 or 1700 Tithables, while others have little more than 500, and are confined to ye narrow Compass of ten or a dozen miles

square. Other Countys are divided by large Rivers So that whenever the Inhab'ts of the opposite side of the River have occasion to repair to their Courts, General Musters, or other publick meetings, the ferriage of each, going and returning, amounts to two shill's or a half Crown, by which 'tis evident how unequally her Maj'tie's Subjects are taxed in their County Levys as well as the unnecessary trouble many of them are put to for want of a better Regulation of the Countys. There is likewise a mighty difficulty to find Justices of the Peace in the large Countys, those who live remote from the Courthouses being unwilling to accept of the office that they may avoid ye trouble of riding fourty or fifty miles to their monthly Courts. There are the like inconveniencys attending the present Settlement of Parishes and proceeding from the same cause, of which many instances might be given, but I shall only trouble Yo'r Lord'ps with one, To Witt, the Parish of Verina in the upper parts of James River, has near nine hundred Tithables in it, a great many of which live fifty miles from their Church and very seldom come there. There is joining to this parish, another consisting only of seventy two Tithables, and almost encompassed with the parish of Varina, yet tho' the remote parts of the Parish of Varina lyes extremely commodious to this small parish, and the Inhab'ts are very desirous to be joined to it, all endeavours that have been used hitherto for obtaining this Conjunction have proved in vain; and the Vestry of Verina will part with none of their Parishoners, because it would increase the parish levy of those that remain, which (I'm sorry to tell Yo'r Lord'ps) is more regarded than the Souls of their fellow Parishoners, and if no remedy can be applyed to this, the consequence must be that those poor people who are deprived of the benefits of the publick Worship will either degenerate into Paganisme or Atheisme, or at best, give opportunity to Sectarys to establish their opinions among 'em, and thereby shake that happy Establishment of the Church of England which this Colony enjoys with less mixture of Dissenters than any other of her Maj'tie's plantations, and when once Schism has crept into the Church, it will soon create Faction in the Civil Government. These, My Lords, are the inconveniencys which flow from the present Constitution of the Countys and parishes, and the remedying thereof will prove equally difficult, if it must only be expected from the As-

sembly, because the greater number of the antient Freeholders, who first fixed their Court houses and Churches for their own Conveniency, will, with others who are indifferent in the matter, always out-balance the injured in the Election of their Representatives, and will be sure to choose such as are of their party. I find by a speech of my Lord Effingham to the Assembly in the year 1684, that he had Authority by his Commission to bound Countys and parishes, and that by virtue thereof he put a stop to their proceedings in a Case of that Nature then before them; but since neither my Commission nor Instructions contain any such power for fixing the bounds of Countys, I am unwilling to make any such step without Yo'r Lord'ps' direction and approbation; neither should I be ambitious of a power in the execution of which I must expect to disoblige several men of Consid'ble figure in the Government, if it were not out of the earnest desire I have to do equal justice to all my fellow Subjects; and that I am well assured it will prove of universal Advantage to the Country, as well as be more agreeable to the generality of the people, than the fruitless applications they have hitherto been accustomed to make to their Assemblys. And if by this means I can once compass such an equal Division as I propose, I shall then use my best endeavours to obtain for Yo'r Lord'ps an exact Survey of the several Countys in the Colony, and with that a true Rent-roll which has been so long desired, and towards which there is now a good foundation laid by some Causes I have got inserted in a Bill pass'd this Session.

I have had much struggle, both with the Council and Burgesses, in relation to the conditions of taking up Land, mentioned in her Maj'ty's Instructions, as this was the chief Grievance with which most of the Countys had charged their Burgesses. That house did pretty early present an address to me to permitt Land to be taken up in the Antient method, and intended before the end of their Session to have prepared an Address to her Majesty upon the same Subject; but as I gave them no hopes at first of such a Condescention, so the answer I sent them at last contains such reasons deduced from their own Records, and the first Constitutions of the Government as I believe has convinced them that they have not so much cause to complain of her Maj'tie's late conditions as they imagined, and by that means I have

diverted them from interrupting her Maj'tie's more weighty affairs with their Representations. And Yo'r Lord'ps will find no other application to her Maj'ty from this Assembly, than only an address of thanks for her late favours to this Colony, and expressing ye ease and happiness they at present enjoy.

Tho' I have reason to believe all discontents about the manner of granting of Land are now over, Yet I am humbly of opinion, that her Maj'ty may receive consid'ble service and ye Country great satisfaction, as well as advantage, if permission were given to take up land on one side of James River only, upon the antient conditions of seating and planting. That River, according to the best acco'ts of the Indians, issues from a Lake on ye other side of the great Mountains that ly to the Westward of us, and makes its way through them. If such a permission were granted there, while the Lands in other places are under stricter conditions, the people would soon carry on their Settlem'ts to ye very Source of that River, and ye advantages that may reasonably be expected from hence are these: That Whereas the french are endeavouring to settle a communication between Canada and their late Settlements on Mississippi by the way of the Lakes, our people would, by pushing on their settlem'ts in one straight Line along the banks of James River, be able to cutt off that communication and fix themselves so strongly there that it would not be in the power of the French to dislodge them, especially considering how much further they must travell than we to come at that place, as seems to be manifest by the Discoverys which I have encouraged to be made this fall by a Company of Adventurers, who found the Mountains not above a hundred miles from our Upper Inhabitants, and went up to the top of the highest Mountain with their Horses, tho' they had hitherto been thought to be unpassable, and they assured me that ye descent on the other side seemed to be as easy as that they had passed on this, and that they could have passed over the whole Ledge (which is not large) if the season of the year had not been too far advanced before they set out on that Expedition. And by this means also it is most probable that a very profitable Trade might be established with foreign Nations of Indians, and our Indian Traders would find convenient places of Refreshment without being obliged (as they are now) to travell some hundreds

of miles through Desarts before they can vend their Commodities.⁴² I gave Yo'r Lord'ps an account in my last of a project intended to be laid before the next Assembly for carrying on an Iron Work, but that design did not meet w'th the countenance w'ch was expected from the House of Burgresses, it being the temper of the People here never to favour any Undertaking unless they can see a particular advantage arising to themselves, and these Iron mines, lying only at the Falls of James River, the rest of the Country did not apprehend any benefitt they should reap thereby. Since therefore the Country hath so little inclination to make use of the advantages which nature has put into their hands, I humbly propose to Yo'r Lord'ps' consideration whether it might not turn to good account if her Majesty would be pleased to take that work into her own hands, sending over workmen and materials for carrying it on, and imploying therein the Revenue of Quitt-rents which would be a sufficient ffund to bring it to perfection. I have been assured that the Oar has been tryed and found extraordinary Rich, and I have discoursed the Owners of the Land, and find them very willing to yield up their Right into her Maj'tie's hands without expecting any other consideration than such an Office in the management of the work as they shall be found capable of. The Iron might be sent home as Ballast to Ships without any other charge than of Sloops or Lighters to put it on board, and by this means her Maj'ty may prevent its being manufactured in this Country, which is the only ill consequence that might have been feared if this work had been undertaken by the Inhabitants, As to that part of your Lord'ps' Letter of the 28th of August last, wherein Yo'r Lord'ps are pleased to expect a particular account of the Resolutions of the General Court as well in relation to the settling and adjusting ye boundarys between this Colony and Carolina as to the interruptions given by

⁴² A precursor, it appears, of the famous "Tramontane Expedition," which was undertaken August 20th, 1716, by Spotswood and a party of about fifty gentlemen, rangers, pioneers, Indians and servants. They returned to Williamsburg September 17th. For accounts of the Expedition see Hugh Jones's *Present State of Virginia*, Beverley (Preface to Ed. of 1722), Fontaine's *Diary*, Campbell's *Introduction to the Richmond reprint of Beverley* (1855), Campbell's *Virginia* (1860), Caruthers's "Knight of the Horse shoe," and Slaughter's *History of Bristol Parish*.

that Province to the Indian Trade, I humbly take Leave to acquaint your Lord'ps that neither of those Affairs were treated of in the General Court, but only in the Council. And I hope the proceedings which I sent Yo'r Lord'ps by the fleet will satisfy Yo'r Lord'ps of my endeavours to bring the first to a speedy determination, and as to the latter, I have lately received Complaints of fresh interruptions given to our Indian Traders, Whereupon I am now preparing an Express to be sent to South Carolina with a Duplicate of her Maj'tie's Order in Council and to know the reasons why that order is not obeyed, since I have been well assured it has been sent to the Government long ago by a conveyance from London. I have already acknowledged Yo'r Lord'ps' favour in hastening thither the Triton's prize, and that both that Ship and the Enterprize were here, and would be a sufficient defence for our Coast against the Enemy's Privateers.

The intended Insurrection of the Negroes mentioned in Yo'r Lord'ps' Letter to have been communicated by Collo. Jenings, gave me occasion at the begining of this Session to recommend to the Assembly to make provision against the like accidents, and especially to prevent the meetings and consultations of the Negroes. Upon w^{ch} they spent several days in fraiming a Bill; but it being loaded with so many Clauses w^{ch} were thought too severe by the Majority of the House, they very unaccountably threw out the whole Bill to the great regret of the wiser part of the House, who by an Address to me have made Apologys for that miscarriage and referr'd the further consideration of that matter to their next session.

I wish I could inform your Lord'ps that the sickness wherewith this Country has been of late afflicted, was wholly abated, but I'm sorry to acquaint your Lord'ps that it still continues and that about three weeks ago Collo. Churchill,⁴ one of the Council, died of it. I have also received by this Conveyance a Letter from

⁴ Colonel William¹ Churchill, of Middlesex Co. He had issue: i. Armistead² of "Bushy Park," died before 1776, married Hannah —, (born 1700; died 1776); ii. Elizabeth,³ married — Dawson; iii.³ Priscella, married — Lewis. Armistead² Churchill had with other issue: i. William,³ County Lieutenant of Middlesex, who was alive in 1781. The Churchills have intermarried with the Carter, Fontaine, Robinson, Bassett, and other estimable Virginia families, and were gallantly represented in the Virginia line during the Revolution.

Mr. Popple,⁴⁵ with the list of fees to be taken by the Officers of the Admiralty, and shall take care that the same be punctually observed. Should I enlarge now on all the proceedings of the late Assembly, I am afraid I should swell this Letter to a larger Bulk than perhaps might be proper to send by this Conveyance, nor shall I hereafter trouble Yo'r Lord'ps with large accounts by these packet Boats till I know Yo'r Lord'ps' pleasure therein. I shall therefore cease to trouble Yo'r Lord'ps any further at present and refer to my next which I hope in a short time to send with the Laws and Journals of the Assembly by the Conveyance of some Ships of force bound hence for Great Britain.

15 Decm'r, 1710.

*To my Lord Dartmouth:*⁴⁶

MY LORD:

It is with great Satisfaction that I am to acknowledge the hon'r of y'r Lo'p's of the 31st of July last, which brought me the agreeable news of yo'r Lord'p's promotion to the office of Secretary of State. I heartily congratulate Yo'r Lord'p on this new mark of her Majesty's favour, and wish you as much honour as all honest men expect of happiness from Yo'r Lo'p's administration. The present Conveyance will permitt me to trouble Yo'r Lo'p with little else than only to acquaint you that our Assembly is just now broke up, after having passed several Laws w'ch I hope will be acceptable to her Majesty, and demonstrate that perfect harmony there is in this Government, w'ch I shall endeavor to improve more and more for her Majesty's service. I hope in a short time by the conveyance of some Ships of force, bound hence for Great Britain, to send Yo'r Lord'p a Transcript of the Laws and Journals of this Assembly, and to

⁴⁵ Alured Popple, Secretary of the Board of Trade; appointed governor of Bermuda in October, 1736. He died there beloved and esteemed by those whom he wisely governed. They evidenced their affection by erecting a handsome monument to his memory, which bears a glowing inscription in testimony of his worth.

⁴⁶ Secretary of State.

enlarge more particularly on the other affairs of this Colony than the present opportunity will give me leave. In the meantime I pray Yo'r Lord'p to believe that no man is with more passion and respect. My Lord, Yo'r Lord'p's.

W'MSBURGH IN VIRG'A, December 15th, 1710.

SIR :

The Commissioners appointed on her Majesty's behalf for settling the Boundarys between this Colony and Carolina, have reported to me, that notwithstanding the publick engagements of the late President and Council of Carolina, that no lands should be taken up within the contraverted bounds till they were finally settled and adjusted, Nevertheless great Tracts of Land have been surveyed and taken up in those parts by the Inhabitants of Carolina, and laid out by the Surveyor of that Province, and that the present Surveyor General of Carolina and his Deputys still continue ye same encroachm'ts on her Majesty's property, although neither of them can be ignorant how far it is aimed on her Majesty's behalf, after having been privy to the proofs and examinations taken by the Comm'rs for settling the Boundarys. Wherefore, that I may remove the unreasonable pretences of such people who may fancy themselves to have acquired a Right to those Lands by their unwarrantable Encroachments, I think it necessary to acquaint you that I do in her Majesty's name assert her Right to all the Lands lying to the Northward of the mouth of Weyanoake Creek, now called Waycocon, and to the Northward of the Line w'ch according to ye Charter of the Proprietors of Carolina ought to be run in a due west course from thence to ye South seas. And I do further protest against the signing of Patents for any land lying to the Northward of that Line and Boundary. And for as much as I have lately issued a proclamation containing the former prohibition of making Entrys within ye disputed bounds by the Surveyors or Inhabitants of this Colony, it will not I hope be thought unreasonable that I expect the like prohibition to be made on the part of the Government of Carolina untill the determination of the present dis-

putes concerning the bounds, w'ch I shal on my part endeavor to hasten as much as possible.

Directed To the hon'ble Edw'd Hide,⁴⁷ Esq'r,
Gov'r of North Carolina in Council.

DECEMBER 24.—On receipt of a letter from Collo. Carter⁴⁸ that sev'll Indians had been seen at ye head of Rappa [hannock river] and that he had ordered the Militia to patrole, a letter was writt approving of what he had done and desiring, in case ye Indians should committ any acts of hostility, that he should send immediate notice, that further care might be taken for the protection of the Inhabitants.

PART OF A LETTER TO COLLO. HYDE, DATED —.

I'm sorry to hear that our Tributary Indians disturb or injure any of her Maj'ty's Subjects and shall take care to prevent as much as I can any ground of Complaint as to the Meherine, but if those injurys are done to persons within the contraverted bounds, I think they have as little reason to complain as they have right to be there. I'm sure none of 'em have had any Liberty from this Government to take up Land in those parts, and I hope the Government of Carolina have had the same Regard to their own publick engagements not to suffer any encroachments to be made by the Inhab'ts of that Province, which We have had the more reason to expect from them out of respect to her Majesty, in whose behalf all along that land has been claimed.

⁴⁷ Edward Hyde.

⁴⁸ Colonel Robert Carter, who from his extensive landed possessions, who known as "King" Carter. Upon the death of Governor Hugh Drysdale, 22d July, 1726, as President of the Council, Col. Carter became acting Governor, and so continued until some time between August 17th and October 13th, 1727, when Sir William Gooch was appointed Governor.

To Collo. Hyde :

SIR :

Since my letter of the 3d instant I received by Capt. Jones yo'rs of the 29th of January, which I had an opportunity the next day after the receipt to communicate to the Council, and can't forbear letting you know with how much satisfaction they received the assurance of your readiness to stop further Entrys within the contraverted Bounds, and to find in the Government of Carolina a gentleman whose word can be depended on, after the publick engagements of those formerly in the administration there have proved of no Effect, and have been so little Regarded that the Surveyor General, who was then one of the Council, and obliged himself, under his hand, to suffer no further encroachments on the Lands in Dispute, had been the principal occasion of those that have been committed since. It has been the chief care of those in the administration of affairs here after they understood the pretensions of the Lord Proprietors to hinder the seating of any of the Inhabitants of this Colony on the Land in Controversy, to which purpose, orders have been issued from time to time to restrain them, and to discourage them the more, it was thought necessary to give publick notice that none who did unwarrantably seat themselves upon that Land should be admitted to claim any Right, if it should be determined to belong to her Majesty, and for that reason I cannot agree to what you are pleased to intimate in your Letter of reserving to the present Possessors and Claimers the Rights they suppose themselves to have acquired by virtue of Entrys or Surveys, because no such Entrys or Surveys ought to have been made before the bounds had been ascertained, there being no reason why that Land should be taken to belong to the Proprietors untill the Disputes are determined, since the presumption of Right, till then, is much stronger for the Queen, and there's as little reason that the Inhabitants of Carolina should be on a better foot than those of Virginia. I shall be very glad to have the matter brought to an Issue as soon as may be by the intervention of the Commiss'rs that are appointed for that purpose, but if you will consider how long it has been in agitation, I'm persuaded you will not think there has been any precipitation used in negotiating that in the

space of ten months (for it is no less since it was first sett on foot) w^{ch} might have been done in less than one, and if your Comm^rs be left to their own inclinations, I'm apt to believe, according to what they have acted hitherto, they will find excuses to delay it as many years as they have already done months. For my part, as I must plainly declare, that to proceed with such Dilatoriness, is not paying a just deference to her Maj^{ty}'s commands, so on the other hand, it cannot be for the interest either of the Queen or the Proprietors, since whatsoever has the Right, must in the mean time lose the benefitt of the Quitt-rents, and that Loss, together with the Distractions among the People, through the uncertainty of their Titles, will be but slenderly compensated by the private gain of Your Comm^rs in the immediate Surveys, tho' that seems to have been their chief aim in all their affected Delays they have used in this affair. You have yourself been Witness how much I have pressed them to proceed, and how little Effect I have had of their promise. I have now lately had letters from England pressing a speedy Conclusion of this matter. Wherefore I am fully Resolved that if I don't speedily hear that your Commiss^{rs} intend to proceed in good earnest, I shall order our Comm^rs to go on without them, and to prepare the best State of the Case they can, in order to be laid before her Majesty. I did in my last, answer in part, the complaints which you say have been made to you against the Maherine Indians, to which I shall now add, that I shall be far from encouraging them to prejudice any of her Maj^{ty}'s Subjects, but it is necessary to inform you that the Laws of this Colony have sufficiently provided for the redress of any injurys done by Indians to the English, and if any just grounds of Complaint be proved, the partys injured may be remedied by Course of Law here, without engaging the Government in their quarrell. As to their disturbing the possessors of Land within three miles of their Town, I don't know by what Right any one came to settle there, it being contrary to the articles of Peace concluded with those Indians, which have the Regal approbation. In pursuance whereof, this Government hath always taken care to restrain people from settling within the Indian bounds, even tho' they themselves are consenting, because it is hardly possible to preserve a good Correspondence between the English and the Indians, where they

live too near to each other. But I am credibly informed the Indians have more reason to complain of injustice from the people of Carolina, who are daily tresspassing upon them, and if they do sometimes retaliate it is more excusable because your people have been the first aggressors, by seating without Right on the Lands of which the Indians had the first possession; however, I shall give orders to the Indians to behave themselves as becomes them to all her Maj'tie's Subjects, and I dare promise the partys injured shall have justice done them upon making out their complaints. I am obliged likewise to acquaint you that I have received private advertisement of some in Yo'r Government intending to fall upon the Indians, and to compell them by force to yield to their unreasonable pretentions. Tho' such practices have been tolerated during the late Confusions, I hope your authority will now restrain them from an action so unreasonable, and which may be attended with a Train of ill consequences, by involving both Governments in a War with the Indians, for tho' they may perhaps surprize that one Nation, they ought to consider that there are a great many others that will take the alarm when they find the English have broke their faith with them, and that there's no Dependance on our Treatys, which would be a just reproach on us, they would do well to consider that every Act of violence is not attended with the like Success, and that the next may not prove so fortunate as their last, because it may be worth while to reflect how far they may be made accountable for the consequences of such an unjustifiable undertaking. And I am very confident you will not interpret the asserting her Maj'tie's Right in a just and legal way, nor the Observation of the publick faith in the protection of the Indians, as any hardships on yo'r Government. I shall conclude with assuring you that nothing shall be wanting on my part (agreeable to those ends) to improve more and more, a good Correspondence between Virginia and Carolina, and more agreeably to testify to you the Respect with which

I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, M'ch 6th, 1710 [1711].

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

Being now to convey to Your Lordships' hands the Journals of the Assembly of this Colony with the Laws passed in the late Session, I beg Leave to accompany them with some few Remarks which I design shall be the whole Subject of this Letter. Her Majesty having been pleased to signify the particular Clauses in the Act passed in the former Session of Assembly, for raising a publick Revenue, which were the occasion of its being repealed. I have now obtained a new Act to be passed without any of those disagreeable Clauses, and I hope it is conformable to her Maj'tie's pleasure, since both the Sallary to the Officers for collecting, and the encouragement to the Masters of Ships for paying the two Shillings ⁷/₈ hogshead, and other Dutys are again settled, upon the same Foot as they were by the Act which first raised that Revenue, and the payment of the tonnage⁴⁹ is ascertained, according to the Rule of Admeasurement proposed by the Comm'rs of her Maj'tie's Customs, w'ch is certainly the most easy for the Trade, and the only practicable way in this Country where the Ships cannot be laid dry in order to their mensuration. And tho' there was formerly a Law in this Country ascertaining the Sallary of the Council⁵⁰ yet I have not suffered any such establishment to be inserted in this Act, because it is certainly more agreeable to that dependance w'ch they ought to have on the Crown that they should owe their Support, as well as their promotion, Entirely to her Maj'tie's Bounty, and not to claim it by a Law here. Upon what Yo'r Lord'ps were pleased to observe in your Letter to the President and Council, the 26th of March, that the Act for establishing the General Court made in the pre-

⁴⁹ A port duty levied of "one shilling and three pence current money of England" for every ton burthen of vessels entering. *Hening*, vol. iii, p. 345.

⁵⁰ The act passed in October, 1705, appropriates annually out of the Export duty on tobacco of two shillings per hogshead, £350 sterling, to be divided among the members of the Council "in consideration of their trouble and charge in the General Assemblys and general courts." *Hening*, vol. iii, p. 348.

ceding Assembly was unfit for her Maj'tie's Royal approbation, by reasons of several Defects therein, I recommended that matter to this Assembly, and an Act is accordingly passed to explain that Act establishing the General Court, wherein her Maj'tie's Royal prerogative, both in appointing Courts of Record and in receiving Appeals from the Judgments of the General Court here, is fully Recognized in the terms Your Lord'ps were pleased to direct.⁵¹ I was very glad when the complaints from several Countys against one Clause in the Act passed last Session of Assembly concerning the granting, seating and planting of Land gave me an occasion to putt this Assembly upon repealing the whole. The House of Burgesses, to whom these complaints were first made, prepared a Bill (which Yo'r Lord'ps will find mentioned in their Journal) to repeal only that Clause giving Liberty to the Owners of six Negros to hunt on their Neighbours' Lands, but when it came to be sent up to the Council I

⁵¹ For Act, see *Hening*, vol. ii, pp. 489-490.

The Speaker of the Assembly, Peter Beverley, addressed a communication to the Governor November 9, 1710, in which he says: "Having entered into the consideration of your Honour's speech and finding by the two paragraphs thereof, which relates to the *Habeas Corpus* Act and the Courts of Oyer and Terminer, we may have occasion, in order to a further Progress upon the Paragraphs for a view of the Royal Instructions therein mentioned, therefore we humbly pray your Honour to Communicate the same to us." *Calendar Virginia State Papers*, vol. i, pp. 143-4.

The General Court was composed of the Governor, as President, and the members of the Council, twelve in number, who were appointed by the King on the recommendation of the Governor. The court held two sessions annually, on the 15th of April and the 15th of October, in a Court of Oyer and Terminer. They sat also in chancery cases in sums above £20, the Governor as Chancellor. Their decisions could be appealed from to the King in Council for all sums involving more than £500. The Council, from the year 1680, constituted an upper house of the Assembly. The position was one attended with many privileges, and was deemed a high honor. A member of the Council was exempt from taxation, he was a judge, colonel of his county, and usually engrossed the offices of emolument in the colony—naval officer, collector, auditor, and farmer of the quit-rents.

The County Courts were composed of gentlemen of the county appointed judges by the Governor, eight in number, of whom four constituted a quorum. They sat monthly, and had criminal jurisdiction in all but capital cases. They were courts of probate, and had final jurisdiction in all cases of less amount than £20. Above that sum an appeal might be taken to the General Court.

caused it to be Stopped there, and prevailed with the Burgesses to prepare a new bill repealing entirely the former Act, and only re-enacting such parts of it as regarded the people's own private Titles and Propertys, without meddling at all with what concerned the Rights of her Majesty as to the granting of Land or disposing of Escheats, believing that the former Law was not disapproved for any just advantages it derived to the Subject but for the unreasonable Encroachments it made on her Majesty's prerogative, of which I have experienced the ill consequences during my own administration, having thus far engaged the Assembly in parting with so many advantages to which they thought themselves entitled by that first Law. I was resolved to add to this some new ones in behalf of the Crown, for want of which, I have observed great frauds committed to the prejudice of her Majesty in her Revenues, and I had the good fortune to accomplish what I proposed with less difficulty than I expected from the contrary interests of some of the most consid'ble men of the Country and of a great part of the Assembly. I shall briefly touch upon the heads of those clauses that are now in the Bill, and which I hope will very much improve her Maj'tie's Revenue of Quitt-rents. 1st. That Whereas heretofore great Tracts of Land have been taken up and remained many years uncultivated. The owners in that time never taking any care to pay the Quitt-rents, as knowing very well that the Sherifs could find nothing on the Land to destrain. This Law enacts that the non-payment of Quitt-rents for three years shall be a forfeiture of the land. 2d. It being found that most of the old Grants contain a greater number of acres within their bounds than are expressed in the patents. This Act provides that if the present Possessor do not give an account to the Sherif of the just quantity of Land he holds, and obtain Rights for the surplus, and pay the Quitt-rents from the publication of this Act, any other person after notice given may survey the Lands and take out a patent for the surplus. And Lastly, that irregular way of application to the General Court for Grants of the Queen's Land (which may often happen without the knowledge or intervention of her Majesty's Governors, since by a Law now in force that Court may Consist of only five of the Council, without the Governor) is altered, and as the first application for Lapsed Land is now directed to be made to the Governor, So the

last Resort is likewise to him, and the General Court have no further to do therein than only to enquire and declare whether the Land petitioned for be again reverted to the Crown, which though it may seem an inconsiderable circumstance, Yet with submission I cannot but think it is of very great consequence to her Maj'tie's service, since the dependance which the people ought to have on her Maj'tie's Governor would (according to the former practice) in a short time have been wholly transferred upon the General Court, besides the dangerous Consequence of admitting that to be claimed in a Court of Judicature as a Right which ought to be considered as a matter of favour flowing solely from the Crown. Pursuant to her Maj'tie's Instructions, I did, at the beginning of this Session, recommend to the Assembly the finishing the house they have begun to build for the Governor; upon which they have passed an Act appropriating the sum of two thousand one hundred ninety five pounds for that Use. For raising of which Sum, and discharging sundry Publick Debts contracted since the last Assembly, which amount to almost £1,800, they have by another Act layed a Duty on Liquors and Slaves for three years. The duty on Liquors is the same as was laid the last Assembly, and that on slaves they have thought fitt to advance to £5 a head for all imported by Water, and twenty shillings on Indian Slaves imported by Land. I soon perceived that the laying so high a Duty on Negros was intended to discourage the importation, and therefore thought it necessary to use the arguments which your Lord'ps will find in my Message of the 27th of November, mentioned in the — page of the Journal of Assembly, marked No. 1, besides my endeavours with particular members for moderating that Duty, but they urged what is really true, that the Country is already ruined by the great number of negros imported of late years, that it will be impossible for them in many Years to discharge the Debts already contracted for the purchase of those Negros, if fresh supplys be still poured in upon them while their tobacco continues so little valuable, but that the People will run more and more in Debt, and must be forced to imploy their hands upon other Manufactures. Whereupon finding them unanimously resolv'd Rather to lose the Bill than to go contrary to the general inclination of the Country in this particular, I at last yielded to pass the Act as they had prepared it, after having been assured by the most

considerable Traders that this Duty will be no Discouragement to the Negro Trade if Tobacco becomes valuable, and on the other hand tho' no Duty were laid on Negros, the Country is not in a Capacity to purchase any Number while their tobacco is at so low a Rate, and that this Duty will only affect some few Merchants that perhaps may import Negros before they are acquainted with the Circumstances of the Country, but none that are thoroughly versed in this Trade. Since therefore the Duty is only for three years, and that it will at least require so much time before the Country can possibly be in a condition to pay off the Debts already contracted, I hope the passing this Law, which is so necessary for the ease and satisfaction of her Maj'tie's Subjects here, will not be disagreeable to her Majesty.⁵² Your Lord'ps will observe in the above mentioned Message another Exception I took against this Bill, which was that the Virginia Owners enjoyed a greater privilege and Exemption than her Maj'tie's British Subjects and that it seemed contrary to her Maj'tie's Intentions declared in the like case upon the Act for raising the two shillings $\frac{7}{8}$ hogshead. But to this they had a ready answer that the same Exemption had been always inserted in the former Imposition bills, without having even been disapproved of by her Majesty or her Royal Predecessors. And this being a matter wherein I had no particular Directions, I did not think it proper for me to reject upon that account a Bill which was principally intended for complying with her Maj'ty's commands for finishing the Governor's house. Yet, if your Lord'ps are of opinion that no such Exemption ought to be allowed, I beg you will be pleased to instruct me therein, that I may govern myself accordingly. Amongst the Bills that were prepared by the Committee for revising the Laws of this Colony, there were one for establishing County Courts, which was sent to your Lord'ps and returned by Collo. Nott in order to be passed into a Law, but the Assembly

⁵² The title of this act is given in *Hening* (vol. iii, p. 482), but not the act itself. The cause of omission is thus stated: "As the law agrees almost verbatim with the 1st chapter of the acts of 1705 [*Hening*, volume iii, p. 233,] it is unnecessary to repeat it." The act of 1705 provides a duty only of twenty shillings for every negro or other slave imported. The act was doubtless disapproved by the Council of Trade, as a serious detriment to an important source of revenue to the English Government through the African Company. It is amply evidenced that the colonists were powerless to prevent the extension of an evil which was so profitable to Great Britain.

having inserted in it a Clause, making the advice and Consent of the Council necessary to the nomination of Justices of the peace, he stood justified with Your Lord'ps for rejecting it. This Law came now again under consideration, and upon the Exception made against it before, that unreasonable article was struck out by the Burgesses before it passed that House. But when it came up [before] the Council, I found they had in Effect comprized in this Bill, two others that had no relation to one another. One directing the manner of granting probats of Wills and administrations, and another for appointing publick Rolling houses, the latter was so disagreeable to all the Gentlemen of Estates in the Country that the Council thought fitt to strike it out, and I thought it proper for me to reject the former, being altogether of a different nature from the first part of the Bill, and on that account disagreeable to her Maj'tie's Instruction and that Caution which Yo'r Lord'ps have thought fitt on several occasions to repeat to the Governors here to avoid the inserting diffrent matters in one Law, besides the Danger of admitting a practice of that kind to be introduced, which may prove an ill precedent if the Burgesses think fitt to use it on other Occasions. Another reason of my Dis-proving of that part of the Bill which gives the power of probats and administrations entirely to the County Courts, is because it is inconsistent with my Instructions, by which that power is among other Ecclesiastical Jurisdictions reserved to the Governor. However, seeing such an inconsistency was not an Objection made by Your Lord'ps, when the project of that same Bill lay formerly before you, I did (for Yo'r Lord'ps' sentiments, and not my own private Interests shall sway me in all points) lett the Assembly know that if they would prepare a particular Bill for settling the method of granting probats and administrations, I'd pass it, but they being desirous of separating, thought fitt to postpone it to another Session, so that I am in hopes of receiving Your Lord'ps' pleasure on that Bill e're any further proceedings be therein. And if Your Lord'ps shall please to approve of a moderate consideration for the signing yearly some hundreds of Probats and Administrations, I shall most cautiously endeavour to bring by such honest means, the Income of my Government to bear some reasonable proportion to that Representation which was made me in Europe, before I had quitted my Employments in the Army there. The uncertainty of the Coin, has for a long time been a matter of General

Complaint in the Country, and the remedying of it has been attempted without success in former Assemblys, the great Difficulty being to settle a Currency without prejudicing her Maj'tie's Revenues, but I hope the Act now passed, is contrived so as to answer both. For as the Currency is settled without enhancing the value, so as to draw the money from other Colonys which seems to be the principal Aim of her Maj'tie's proclamation, there is likewise due Provision made not only that all her Majesty's Revenues, but all Debts contracted in Great Brittain shall be answered in Sterling money.⁵³ There is also a Clause declaring the Currency of Copper money,⁵⁴ whenever her Majesty

⁵³ The values of various foreign coins were fixed at the following rates: "Pieces of Eight of Mexico, Sevil and Pillar Ducatoons of Flanders, Eccus of France, or Silver Lewis and Crusados of Portugal, and all halves, quarters and lesser pieces of the same shall pass at three pence, three farthings the penny-weight; and all Peru pieces, Cross Dollars and Old Rix Dollars of the Empire and lesser pieces of the same, shall pass at three pence, half-penny the penny-weight." *Hening*, vol. iii, p. 503.

⁵⁴ Through the influence of the Duchess of Kendall, a favorite of George I, William Wood was granted, in 1722, a patent for coining copper money for the American Colonies. He associated with himself Kingswell Eyres, Esq., and a Mr. Marsden, a hardware dealer in Cornwall. The coin supplied, that known to numismatists as the "Rosa Americana," was of beautiful design and was of Bath metal. It was issued in 1722, 1723, 1724 and 1733, in values of the farthing, half-penny and penny. Wood also had a like patent for Ireland, which he supplied with one denomination, known as the "Wood half-pence." The several coinages of Wood and those of the Kingdom were all current in Virginia at the period indicated, as evidenced by many Examples lingering in the currency, until the reduction in the size of the United States cent led to the redemption of the larger coin of greater metallic value. In 1773 another coin struck off in England was largely circulated in Virginia—The Virginia half-penny. It is believed to have been the result of individual enterprise, with the tacit consent of the English government. In size it was seven-eighths of an inch in diameter, and is thus described:

Device. Bust of George III neck uncovered, head laureated, face to the right, and the hair in a cue behind.

Legend. GEORGIUS III., REX.

Reverse. Arms in an ornamental shield, surmounted by a crown: First, impaling Scotland; second, France; third, Ireland; fourth, the Electoral Dominions.

Legend. VIRGINIA—divided by the shield.

Exergue. 1773—divided by the crown.

This coin was also struck in silver—it is presumed as a numismatic curiosity

shall think fitt to let it be imported, which no Doubt will be a great Conveniency to the Inhabitants, Reserving still to her Majesty to alter and settle the Coin at any other Rate that shall be thought fitt. Finding great inconveniencys to her Maj'tie's Service by the Desertion of Seamen from her Maj'tie's Ships of War, I have obtained an Act to be passed this Session giving suitable Rewards for taking up such Deserters, and inflicting penaltys upon those that shall harbour or conceal them on Shore, which I hope will have a good Effect, both for her Maj'tie's Service, and the trade of the Country. Since tobacco became so little valuable, it hath proven very difficult to get persons to Execute the Office of Sherif, there being no Law of the Country to oblige them to it, by w'ch means justice has been often obstructed, there is now a Law passed for remedying this inconveniency by laying a Fine on such as shall refuse to serve after they are commissioned by the Governor. Tho' the fine be not great, yet it will be sufficient to answer the end and prevent the Delay of Justice, as well as the prejudice to her Maj'tie's Service which has often happened for the want of that Officer. All I shall say further as to this Bill, is that it is a plant of a very quick growth, having been prepared and passed the House of Burgesses in one day, which was occasioned by the throwing out a former Bill, prepared for the same purpose under another Title, through the misapprehension of some of the Members, but their Judgments being better informed, they resolved to retrieve that fault by passing this Bill in the extraordinary manner. The many Abuses committed by Masters of Ships in cutting the tobacco hogsheads in order to make them stow the better, and the great Losses which the ffreighters have sustained in their tobacco by that means, induced this Assembly, upon the general Clamour of the Country, to pass an Act⁵⁵ laying the Masters of Ships under an Obligation both of an Oath and Bond to prevent that practice. I have been informed by some of the most considerable Freighters in the Country that several of their hogsheads that have been cutt on board have lost one-third, and some one-half of their weight before they get home to England, which they attribute to the opportunity the Sailors have of taking the tobacco out of the Hogsheads that are once cutt, and that where their tobacco is not

⁵⁵ *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 497-499.

taken out of the hogshead the Masters of the Ships do often press it so much with hand-screws, in order to cutt off the void part of the hogshead, that it becomes unfitt for the Markett, which they take to be a very great injustice, when they pay so high a ffreight as has been Customary for some years past. This practice is said to grow daily more universal among the Masters of the Ships, and being confirmed to me by persons of whose truth I have no reason to doubt, was a very prevailing motive for my passing this Act, which I'm sensible will be exclaimed against by some of the Merchants, but I think without much Reason, if they consider the justice of the case, for since the Planters here are bound by a Law w'ch is confirmed by her Majesty, under a severe penalty, that their hogsheads shall not exceed a certain size, and are likewise very often obliged to freight at what rate the Masters of Ships are pleased to impose upon them, it is but just that these Masters should be under some Obligation to carry home as much as they receive ffreight for and not be suffered, for the sake of stowing a few more hogsheads, to destroy or damnify their freighters' Tobacco; besides, since the size of tobacco hogsheads was settled, every Master of a Ship can tell almost to a hogshead how many his Ship can carry, and proportion his ffreight accordingly, which renders that practice of cutting the hogsheads more inexcusable than perhaps it was before the making that Law. The great difference which People observe between the weight of their tobacco here, and in England, gives them violent suspicions that it must be taken away by the Sailors, and not being able to account how such people can answer the Customs, gives them ground to believe that the same persons who cheat the Freighters, do likewise defraud the Queen in her Customs by runing that tobacco on shore. Whither this be so or not, I can't pretend to determine, but I doubt not Your Lord'ps will be of opinion that this Country has great Reason to endeavour a Redress of this Abuse. I think it may be a very good plan for this Law that it can injure no man who designs to act honestly, And I hope it will receive the more encouragement from Your Lord'ps, because the country never was under greater Distresses than now, when all the produce of their Labour will scarce afford them Cloaths to wear. Upon an Indictment sometime since exhibited in the General Court against a Woman for concealing the death of her Bastard Child, it was moved for the

prisoner that the Act of Parliament of the twenty-first of James the first, upon which the Indictment was grounded, being a penal statute made since the Settlement of this Country, and wherein the plantations are not named, did not extend hither. Upon which the Court did, having had the concurrent Opinion of the ablest Lawyers here that that Statute did not extend to the plantations, acquitt the Prisoner. But lest that Judgement should give encouragment to such wicked practices, there is now an Act passed to prevent the destroying and murdering of Bastard Children, in the Very terms of the Act of Parliament with some small variation adopting it to the Circumstances of this Country.⁵⁶

The Act for Security and Defence of the Country in times of Danger, passed in the last Assembly being expired, is by an Act passed this session revived and Continued for two years longer.⁵⁷ Upon which I shall not take up your Lord'ps' time, since the former Act has been long since under your Lord'ps' consideration.

The Act passed last Session of Assembly for regulating Ordinrys and Restraint of tipling houses having been found defective, an Act is passed this Session for the further Restraint of tipling houses and other disorderly places whereby many abuses occasioned by those places will be remov'd.⁵⁸

It would be needless to take up Yo'r Lord'ps' time with any comment on the Act appointing a Treasurer, or on that for raising a publick Levy, since they are such as pass of Course every Session of Assembly, where any Duty is laid on publick debts to be paid.⁵⁹ The other two are private Acts, on which I shall not give your Lord'ps the trouble of enlarging. One is an Act to set free a Negro who discovered the late Conspiracy of the Negros here, and for paying the Owners the value of him, and the other an Act to enable Mrs. Harrison, the widow of Benjamin Harrison, junior, dec'd, to sell some of his Lands and

⁵⁶ *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 516-517. The punishment prescribed was death.

⁵⁷ *Hening*, vol. iii, p. 496. Re-enacting chap. 31 of 1705, pp. 362-367.

⁵⁸ *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 535-536.

⁵⁹ *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 495-496. It constitutes Peter Beverly, Esq., Treasurer, with a salary of four per cent. upon all money received by him and accounted for to the General Assembly.

Slaves for the payment of his Debts.⁶⁰ The first will prove an Encouragement for the Discovery of future Plotts, and the last being with so just an intention as the payment of debts and containing nothing in it injurious to the publick or any private person, I hope your Lord'ps will have no cause to except against the passing of either of them. Having in my Speech at the opening of the Session, and in sundry Messages afterwards recommended several other matters to be passed into Laws, I beg leave to refer to the Address of the Burgesses the last of November, for the reasons why they did not proceed therein, but I hope their next Session will make them much better acquainted with one another, and with their business, and bring to perfection what they have now delayed. I send your Lord'ps cypys of the Addresses of the Council and Burgesses to her Majesty, which being only of Compliment and not of business, I have enclosed to Collo. Blackistone, who is to deliver them to my Lord Orkney, (if he is in town,) in order to be presented to her Majesty, but if my Lord should be absent, I have directed him to wait on Your Lord'ps and receive your commands in what manner they shall be presented; it would be immodest for me to say anything as to the subject of those Addresses, but I can with truth assure your Lord'ps that the framing of both was without my knowledge. I hope Your Lord'ps will not find, by any of the proceedings of this Assembly, that I have purchased the compliments they have thought fitt to make me, by any undue compliances with their humour, to the prejudice of her Majestie's Service. And this I think will plainly appear by some of my messages, particularly, that I sent the Burgesses the 5th of December, in answer to their Address concerning the patenting of Land, wherein I have kept strictly to her Majesty's Instructions, Notwithstanding all the importunitys both of the Council and Burgesses, and the private Applications of Diverse others.

⁶⁰ Elizabeth, the widow of Benjamin Harrison, Jr., of Charles City county, who died seized in fee simple of 20,000 acres of land and eighty slaves. He left an only son, Benjamin, father of Benjamin "the signer of the Declaration of Independence," and others. His next brother, Nathaniel Harrison, gentleman, "freely consenting" to the act. *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 358-540.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To the Council of Trade:

MY LORDS:

Tho' I have in a particular letter given your Lord'ps my observations on the Laws past in the last Session of Assembly, I must still beg leave to add a few words upon that for raising a publick Revenue, amongst other reasons mentioned in her Maj'tie's Letter of the 14th of February, 1707-8, for repealing that Law made in 1705. Her Majesty is pleased to take notice that the Naval Officers are only allowed half fees for Vessells belonging to Virginia Owners, and is pleased to call it an unreasonable clause. Her Majesty did in like maner, that the making three years' Residence in the Country a qualification for a Councillor to receive his portion of the Sallary allowed to that Board, was a discouragement to such of her Ma'ty's British Subjects who might upon the account of trade or otherwise transport themselves to this Colony; both which Clauses are wholly left out of the Act now passed; but I must not omit to inform your Lord'ps that there are other Laws still in being which defeat her Majesty's gracious intentions in both those particulars. As to that of the Naval Officers' Fees, there was an Act passed in the same Assembly in 1705, and still in force, Entitled An Act for preventing frauds in the Customs and in clearing of Ships, and for ascertaining the Collectors' and Naval Officers fees, &c., wherein there is the same Clause allowing only half fees for the Vessells of Virginia Owners.⁶¹ And as to the discouragement which her Majesty intended to remove from the Subjects of other Dominions in coming to dwell here, they are still as much as ever in being as to what concerns all other persons and Officers, while the Act declaring who shall not bear Office in this Country (made in the same Assembly, 1705) doth subsist. These things I thought necessary to lay before Your Lord'ps, and without offering my own Opinion, submitt them to Your Lord'ps' better Judgment. Your Lord'ps will observe that the Law concerning Land, past this Session, mentions nothing of the manner of granting or terms

⁶¹ *Henning*, vol. iii, pp. 195-197.

of seating; so that I think that matter is now upon the best foot it has been of a long time, especially if your Lord'ps will be pleased to move her Ma'ty to repeal the Act of Assembly made the 23d day of October, 1666, Entitled an Act declaring what is meant by seating of Land. And I see no reason why her Majesty should be bound up by new Laws, either in the method of granting of Land or in the conditions upon which it is to be obtained, it being certainly most just that her Majesty's Instructions should be the only Law in those Cases, Since 'tis apparent that those Concessions of the Crown in relation to the granting of Land after being passed into Laws have been no longer considered as matters of favour, but as the right of the people. But if those Laws are once set aside, I don't think the people will be dissatisfied (at least they will have no reason) with such conditions as her Majesty shall think proper, so long as they are not inconsistent with their Charter. After I had staved off the application which the Assembly intended to make to her Majesty for restoring to them the antient Terms of taking up Land, I thought it necessary to issue a proclamation (of which Your Lord'ps will receive a Copy amongst the other publick papers) to make known to the people the terms upon which her Majesty thought fit to grant them land for the future, and observing the greatest Dissatisfaction to arise among those who had purchased Rights, and by virtue thereof taken up and surveyed their Land before any Notification that her Majesty intended to alter the conditions, and on that account conceived they had hard measure in being abridged of the priviledge which the laws then gave them, by an Instruction *expost facto*, I have, by that proclamation, left their pretentions to be determined by her Majesty. Upon which I beg Leave to represent to Your Lord'ps that the case of those people hath in it a great deal of Equity, for besides that the taking up their Land was on the faith of the Laws then in force, it doth appear that most of them purchased their Rights for money paid into her Majesty's Treasury here, and have been at great Expence in making their Surveys, Tho' there are many Entrys for land made before the death of Collo. Nott,^a on which No patents have yet issued, Yet the persons that took up the Land have had so much time to make improvements

^a Edward Nott, Deputy Governor of the Colony from August 15, 1705, until his death in August, 1706.

thereon that they are now ready to take out patents upon the conditions mentioned in her Majesty's Instructions. So that I believe the number of those who are by this proclamation remitted to her Majesty's favour will not be very considerable, nor their demands great. And therefore I do, with all submission, take the Liberty to recomend their case to Your Lord'ps with my opinion that the gratifying those few in allowing them Patents for their Land upon the terms of seating and planting will give great satisfaction to the whole Country, and be a means to make them easy for the future, under so great an alteration as those new Conditions have introduced. And I am the more encouraged to hope Your Lord'ps will, at this time especially, think fitt to favour the Country in consideration of the dutifull behaviour of this Assembly, and the easiness they have expressed under the hard Circumstances of their Trade and the pressures w'ch that has bro't upon the Country, which I do assure Your Lord'ps are very great. Your Lord'ps will find in that proclamation a Clause prohibiting the granting of Rights for above four hundred acres of Land untill I am satisfyed of the ability and qualifications of the person desiring them. Which Limitation being pursuant to the Plan of the Law for granting of Land sent in by Your Lord'ps, I hope is not improperly placed in this proclamation, and I shall take due care that Your Lord'ps' intentions therein be punctually followed. I am likewise to acquaint Your Lord'ps that I have altered the forme of patents and made them agreeable to the Queen's Instruction, as to the condition of Cultivating, and to the terms of the late Act of Assembly in relation to the forfeiture of the Estate upon the Non-performance or Non-payment of the Quitt-rents, and have made the Sale of them in the Queen's name. Observing in a Letter to the President and Council, Your Lord'ps were pleased to declare your opinion that the Assembly was not dissolved by the death or Removal of a Governor, for the same Royal Authority by which it was called did still subsist. I send Your Lord'ps a Copy of the Writts issued for calling Assemblys, that if Your Lord'ps shall find any inconsistency in this form (which has been long in use), I may receive Your Lord'ps' directions for altering it conformable to Your Lord'ps' opinion. Notwithstanding all the instances I have made to the Government of Carolinia for obtaining a speedy Determination of the Boundarys, I have not been able to bring their Com'rs to any Resolution, and it plainly appears to me that their Chief

design is only to delay it. I send Your Lord'ps the copys of the Letters that have passed between the Governor of that Country and me on this occasion, and I must do him the justice to believe he is, for his own part, very well inclined to bring this Affair to a speedy Conclusion, but he is upon so precarious a footing there, and his Authority so little, that he is forced to submitt his own Judgment to others whose interests are like to suffer by an equitable determination of this controversy. I send your Lord'ps the account of the two shillings p hogshead as it was passed last October, but the death of Collo. Digges,⁶³ her Maj'tie's Auditor, hath prevented my sending by this Conveyance the accounts of the Revenue of Quitt-rents, which remain unperfected by the death of this Gentleman and that of Collo. Churchill, there are now two vacancys in the Council. If your Lord'ps think fitt to move her Majesty to fill those Vacancys Speedily, I beg leave in the first place to recommend Collo. William Bassett,⁶⁴ a Gentle-

⁶³ Dudley Digges, son of Edward Digges who as President of the Council, was acting Governor of the Colony, in 1655-6, and upon whose will probate was granted in "James City" General Court, to his widow Elizabeth, June 15, 1660. Another son, Cole Digges, was a member of the House of Burgesses from Warwick county in 1718 and later, and a member of the Council in 1724.

⁶⁴ His tomb is at Eltham, New Kent county, Va. The inscription is as follows:

[Arms—or, thfee bars wavy gules.]

" Here lies inter'd ye Body of ye Hon'ble
William Bassett of ye County of New Kent,
Esq'r, son of Will'm Bassett, Esq'r, and

Bridget His Wife of ye County of
Southampton in ye Kingdom of England.

He married Joanna, Eldest Daughter
Of Lewis Burwell, Esq., with whom
He Happily Lived 29 years and 10 months
And was Blest with 5 sons and 7 Daughters.

He Departed this Life ye 11th of October,
1723, in ye 53d year of his Age. He

was A Good Christian, A Kind and Indulgent Father,
An Affectionate, Obliging Husband, A Good

Master: His Loss was

Greatly Lamented by His Country,
County and Family, and inexpressibly to
His Mournful, Disconsolate Widow,
who also departed this Life ye 7th day

of October, 1727, in the
53d yeare of her age."

man who has served formerly in that Station with General applause, and has an established good Character in the Country, the occasion of his quitting that station was (as he has confessed to me) to avoid being engaged in publick business in case a Governor should come hither with whom he could not live in that ease and quiett he so much desires, but I have had the good fortune to cure him of that Jealousy, and have prevailed on him to be again of the Council, which I have the more er.deavour'd because of the little Choice the Country affords of fitt persons to supply the Vacancys of that Board. But as it cannot be expected that this Gentleman will serve now in a lower Station than he did before, I hope your Lord'ps will restore him to his former Rank and precedency which I am satisfyed will not be disagreeable to any at that Board.

In the 11th page of the Council Journal, Your Lord'ps will find I have, with the unanimous advice of the Council, augmented the Sallary of the Clerk of the Council to £100 ^p annum, which is conformable to a Representation made to Your Lord'ps by the Governor and Council in the year 1701. The Council were so sensible of the increase of business in that Office, and the present Clerk had gained so much their good Opinion, that they waited only the arrival of a Governor to have given him this allowance some years agoe, And as I am fully perswaded that the making the Sallarys of Officers equal to their trouble, and the rewarding of Meritt is the best way to promote her Maj'tie's Service, I hope Your Lord'ps will not disapprove of what is now given to this Officer, who I do assure Your Lord'ps, deserves encouragement.

This is intended by the Robinson Frigatt, a Ship of good force, bound for London, and is the first that has sailed since the Assembly, I shall, about a fourtnight hence, have the Opportunity of a much better Conveyance (by the Lyon, a Ship of 36 Guns,) to send Your Lord'ps' Duplicates of the Laws and other publick papers, and to add some further accounts of the Affairs of this Colony.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To My Lord Dartmouth :

MY LORD:

According to what I had the honour to write to Your Lord

'p the 15th of December last, I take this opportunity to transmitt to Your Lord

'p, the Journal of the Council and house of Burgesses, in the Laws past in the late Session of Assembly. I shall not interrupt Your Lord

'p's more important Affairs with enlarging upon the particulars of these Acts, having been very full in my Observations on them to the Board of Trade, where I know Your Lord

'p will have a part in every thing that may be thought worthy your notice. I shall only beg Leave to do that justice to this Assembly in assuring Your Lord

'p that I found them very ready to comply with every thing that was proposed to 'em for her Maj'tie's Service, which will more be evident if Your Lord

'p will take the trouble to look into the Laws, particularly thatt for settling the titles and bounds of Lands, &c., wherein there are some Clauses more beneficial for her Majesty in the improvement of her Revenue of Quitt-rents than any that have been enacted since the first settlement of the Country, and as all possible care has been taken to Shew as just Regard to the Royal prerogative, I hope there will not be found in them any thing disagreeable to her Majesty.

Towards the end of the Session, both the Council and Burgesses thought fitt to prepare Addresses to her Majesty to acknowledge the Royal favours lately bestowed on this Colony. I have, by this Conveyance, sent the Addresses to Collo. Blackistone, Agent for the Colony, with directions to wait on Your Lord

'p for your commands in what manner they shall be presented. As to the expressions in those Addresses relating to myself, I can, with truth, assure Your Lord

'p, they were framed entirely without my knowledge, and I hope the proceedings of this Assembly, particularly some of my Messages to the House of Burgesses, will be a sufficient justification that I have not purchased their Compliments, by any undue Compliances, to the prejudice of her Majestie's Service.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To the Lords of the Treasury:

MY LORDS:

It is with much pleasure that I lay hold of this first opportunity of paying my duty to Your Lord'ps and of congratulating Your Lord'ps' promotion to so great and honourable a Trust.

I have little worth troubling your Lord'ps from hence, except to enclose the last half-year's account of the Revenue of 2s. 3^p hogshead appropriated for the Support of the Government. The accounts of her Majesty's other Revenues of Quitt-rents have not yet fallen under my Inspection since I entered on the Government, as not becoming due till Aprill, after which I shall take the first Opportunity of transmitting them.

I take the occasion to acquaint your Lord'ps of the death of a worthy Gent, and one of your Lord'ps' Officers here, Collo. Digges, Auditor of her Majesty's Revenue. I shall leave to Mr. Blathwayt, Auditor Gen'll of the Plantations, who has the nomination of that Officer, to give your Lord'ps an account of the person I have put in to execute that Trust during the vacancy, he being the Officer through whose hands your Lord'ps can most properly receive that Information.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711.]

To the Bishop of London:

MY LORD:

The desire I have to promote the interest of the Church in this Colony, made me lay hold of all Opportunity in my Conversation with the Representatives of our late Assembly to inculcate to them the Justice as well as Advantage of inducting their Min'rs, but I found them so cold on that Subject, and so little disposed to join with me, that I durst not venture to

recommend it in a publick manner.⁶⁵ However, as I have had the good fortune to overcome of their prejudices in other matters, I shall not yet despair of obtaining both a more equal support of the Ministry, and a more Solid Settlement for them, but it will require some time and a good deal of application to lead them into those measures. I beg your Lord'p to believe that my endeavours shall not be wanting to accomplish those good ends, and to testify the sincerity with w'ch I am —

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To the L'ds of the Admiralty:

MY LORDS:

Since my last to Yo'r Lord'ps sent by the Deptford, wherein I enclosed a list of the Garland's stores brought hither from Carolina, I have directed a Survey to be made of those Stores, upon the Information I had of their being in a perishing condition, Severall of them appearing to be in danger of spoiling, I appointed to be sold by publick auction, and I herewith send your Lord'ps the particulars of that Sale, the rest of them that are Serviceable, are secured at Hampton for her Maj'tie's Use, except the Bell, which I have caused to be brought up to Williamsburgh, where there was none before to call the people to Church, and I hope Your Lord'ps will pardon my employing it for that use, 'till I receive Your further directions, The money arising by the Sale of the Stores is Lodged in the hands of one Mr. Nicholas Curle, Naval Officer of the Lower District of James River, who will be accountable for it to Your Lord'ps, But I hope I shall receive Your directions concerning the pay-

⁶⁵ Though the right of induction was resident in the Governor he seems not to have exercised it for years, nor had Commissary Blair, the representative of the Bishop of London, done so but rarely, the services of nearly all the ministers being a matter of yearly contract with the vestries of parishes. Their tenure was consequently precarious, since the vestry through economical motives or spite might depose them annually. An exercise of the prerogative of induction, somewhat later by Governor Spotswood, involved him in an acrimonious altercation with Commissary Blair and others of the clergy who sided with him.

ment of the Salvage and other Charges of which I writt to Your Lord'ps in my last, and, I should have sent the accounts by this Conveyance had not the death of the Auditor Generall of this Colony, to whom they were referred for examination, prevented the perfecting of them. The frequent Desertion of Seamen from her Maj'tie's Ships of War attending here, induced me to gett an Act passed in our late Assembly prohibiting the entertaining of Seamen on shore, whereby a Reward of fifteen shillings is given for taking up a Runaway Seaman if under ten miles from his Ship, and of thirty shillings, if above ten miles, these Rewards are appointed to be paid (if the Deserter belonged to a Merchant Ship by the Master) before the Ship is cleared, and he is hereby impowered to deduct it out of the Seaman's pay, And if the Deserter belong to one of the Queen's Ships of War, or to a Ship gone out of the Country, an Offer is to be made of the Deserter to the Captain of such Ship of War, upon his paying the Reward, or else the Seaman to be delivered to the Master of any Merchant Ship that will pay the Reward for taking him up, but as I am very sensible that no Act made here can bind Your Lord'ps' Officers, and that their refusing to pay the Reward, will prove a Discouragement to the apprehending of Deserters, and render this Act w'ch was chiefly intended for the Service of men of War, of no Effect, I hope Your Lord'ps will be pleased to give Instructions to the Captains of the men of War that resort thither, to pay the Rewards given by that Lâw, which will be the surest means to prevent the great prejudice which often happens to her Majesty's Service by the desertion of her Seamen.

Upon the application of some our Traders, I did, in November last, appoint Capt. Smith in the Enterprize to convey diverse small Vessells from hence to Barbadoes, considering that Ship could be of no Service here during the Winter, but might on the Contrary, have received Damage from the Ice, by lying in an open Road, and I now daily expect his Return.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To Mr. Blathwayt :

SIR :

I take this occasion to inform you of the death of Collo. Digges, Your Deputy in this Colony, a Gentleman for whom I had a very great esteem. I'm well assured that the supplying this vacancy with a person of the best capacity, will be as agreeable to your inclinations, as it is necessary for her Majesty's Service, and I am now to acquaint you that I have appointed Collo. Philip Ludwell⁶⁶ to the care of that Office till you shall think fitt to dispose of it. He is a Gentleman that is in my opinion, for Capacity, Circumstances, and the conveniency of his Residence, near the Seat of the Government, (And which it is no small Argument with a Governor for the influence he has over a great many in the Country, which may be applyed either to her Majesty's Service or disservice,) the fittest person for that Office of any one in the Country. Upon which account I take the liberty to recommend him to your favour, for which he intends to stand a Candidate, and I doubt not he will do what becomes him for your Interest. I here inclose whatt I have writt to the Lords of the Treasury on this Subject, and as I have and shall always show a due Regard to whatever concerns you, I hope you will not encourage those who I understand intend to be Suitors for this Office, not only without giving me any intimation, but have been so unmannerly to hasten away without my knowledge, a Ship which I intended to send the publick Dispatches, out of design to leave others who have better pretensions, no opportunity to make their applications to you. I'm very glad I can inform you that I have obtained an Act to be passed this last Assembly whereby all the frauds and concealments heretofore used in relation to the Queen's Revenue of Quitt-rents will be effectually prevented and removed, and foundation laid for obtaining in a short time, and with no charge to her Majesty, a perfect Rent-roll of the Country so long desired, for the further particulars whereof I beg leave to refer you to the enclosed Extract of some Clauses

⁶⁶ Collo. Philip Ludwell married the widow of Sir William Berkeley. He was for sometime Secretary of the Council, and in 1690 was Governor of the Province of South Carolina.

of the aforementioned Act relating to this matter. I have, with the unanimous advice of the Council and agreeable to a Representation of the Lords Comm'rs of Trade in 1701, by the then Governor and Council, augmented the Sallary of Clerk of the Council to £100 ^{per} annum, in consideration of the increase of that office, and on his being obliged to find all necessarys for the Council Chamber and Office. Mr. Robertson, the present Clerk, has so much the good opinion of the Council that there wanted only the arrival of a Governor to have put him in possession of this Sallary some years agoe, being all satisfied that the business of the office deserved it, as well as his own personal meritt, and I being entirely of the same opinion, I am to request the favour of your good offices in his behalf, if this allowance should be scrupled at the Treasury.

VIRGINIA, March 6th, 1710 [1711].

To Colo. Blackiston :

SIR :

Having writ to you by the New York pacq'ts, soon after the prorogation of our Assembly, and given you some account of their proceedings, I now send you the Original Addresses of the Council and Burgesses to her Majesty, prepared towards the end of the Session. If my Lord Orkney be in town, I desire you will please to make his Lo'p the Compliment of presenting them to her Majesty; but if he be absent, I think they can be presented by no one so properly as yourself; however, it will be necessary in either Case to do it in concert, not only with the Secretary of State, but with the Lords of Trade, to whom I have signified the manner of presenting them, and I would not willingly have their Lord'ps believe themselves slighted in it. As to what relates to myself in those Addresses, I assure you, I am no otherwise fond of the Compliments made me, than as they serve to satisfy my Superiors, that there is a good Agreement between me and the Country, which may be improved for the Queen's Service, and I would have all my friends understand it so.

You will, no doubt hear from sev'll hands of the death of Collo. Digges, which has made way for divers pretenders to the Office of Auditor. I have appointed Collo. Ludwell to supply the Vacancy, and have also recommended him to Mr. Blathwayt's favour for a Grant of that Office. I believe you will hear from him on the same Subject, and I shall be very glad if you can serve him in it, since he will be the most acceptable to me, and I really think (considering all Circumstances) is the fittest person for it of any in the Country. I know that there are other Candidates, tho' they have not thought fitt to communicate to me their pretentions, and I very much suspect some of them have dealt very unhandsomely by endeavouring to prevent my writing by this Ship, which was cleared without my knowledge, and without giving me any opportunity of putting my Letters aboard, tho' she is the first that has gone out since the Assembly, and had I not sent the man of War and brought her in, I must have lost Conveyance, and perhaps I may not escape the reflections of those concerned in her, for taking this Care to send home the publick Dispatches, tho' they cannot say I have detained her above 24 hours beyond the time they must otherwise have stayed, according to their own Confession. I shall, towards the end of this month, have another Opportunity of writing to you and sending you Extracts of some proposals I have made to the Lords, and other publick papers, So shall be the shorter now, and only conclude with assuring you that I am.

VIRGINIA, March 20th, 1710 [1711].

To the Council of Trade:

Having writt to Your Lord'ps so lately and largely by the Robinson frigate, I have little to add to Your Lord'ps' trouble by this Conveyance, except one proposal, which, if it shall be found a mistaken notion in the Affairs of Trade, I hope Your Lord'ps will be pleased to pardon it as proceeding from the sincere intention of one so much a Zealot for what I apprehend to be for the service of her Maj'tie and the true interest of mother Country.

The unhappy Circumstances of the Trade of this Colony oblige me to lay before your Lord'ps the ill consequences which I am apprehensive it may have on that of Great Brittain without the application of some proper and speedy remedy. The great number of Negros imported here (so long as there remained any money or Credit in the Country to buy them) and solely employed in making tobacco, hath produced for so ne years past an increase of that Commodity far disproportioned to the Consumption that could be made of it in all the Marketts w'ch the War had left open, and by a Natural Consequence Lowered the price to a great Degree. This was first felt in those parts of the Country where Tobacco is reputed mean, and the people being disappointed of the necessary supplies of Cloathing for their famyls in return for their tobacco, found themselves under a necessity of attempting to Cloath themselves with their own Manufactures. And the Market for Tobacco still declining and few stores of goods brought in, other parts of the Country through the like necessity, have been forced into the same humour of planting Cotton and Sowing Flax,⁶⁷ and by mixing the first with their wool to supply the want of coarse Cloathing and Linnen, not only for their Negros, but for many of the poorer sort of house keepers. This is now become so universal that even in one of the best Countys for Tobacco, I'm credibly informed there has been made this last year above 40,000 yards of divers sorts of Woolen, Cotton and Linnen Cloth, and other Countys where tobacco is less valuable have no doubt advanced their Manufactures proportionably. Tho' this be at present the General humour of the Country, it is introduced more by necessity than inclination, and the people are so little skilled in this kind of Manufacture that they will with difficulty attain any tolerable perfection in it, and own that what they make now costs them dearer than that they usually had from England when their tobacco bore but a moderate price.

Yet since time and practice makes most things (tho' difficult at first) become Easy and habitual, it is certainly necessary to

⁶⁷ The cultivation of flax and hemp was introduced in the Colony by Sir Thomas Dale in 1611. In April, 1691, the Assembly passed "And Act enjoining the planting and dressing of Flax and Hemp." *Hening*, vol. iii, pp. 81-2.

divert their Applications to some other Commodity that may be beneficial, at least less prejudicial, to the Trade of Great Britain, and wherein the Planters too may find their Accounts. The production of Naval Stores seems to be that w^{ch} this Country is most capable of, and most likely to engage the inclinations of the people here, and might be carryed on with the greatest Advantage to the Trade of Great Britain. The Lands in this Country w^{ch} are improper for tobacco, and bring only such which serves to spoile the Markett, is the most fitt for producing Pitch, Tar and hemp; of the two first there are good Quantitys made and carryed to the West Indies, and some to Brittain, besides the home Consumption, and of the latter enough to show how much more might be produced if there was sufficient encouragement given for it. The Advantages which this Country might have expected from the Act of parliament concerning the importation of Naval Stores has been totally lost through the want of men and substance and Skill in Trade to make use of them, those Merchants we have here extending their thoughts little further than what concerns tobacco, which they understand, but having no Enterprising Genius for new Adventures, and I have been told that the difficultys in obtaining the premiums have even discouraged the Merchants in England from venturing their money in those Commoditys. I would therefore humbly propose that her Majesty may be moved to direct the Commissioners of the Custom to accept of Naval Stores imported from the Plantations at the Current market Rates in payment of the dutys on tobacco, and that upon a Certificate of the Delivery of those Naval Stores to some Officer appointed by the Commissioner of the Navy, the importer shall be entitled to the several Draw backs allowed for prompt payment. This would engage abundance of people to go upon Naval Stores, and would encourage the Freighters and considerable Planters to buy up those Stores and send them to Brittain, to clear the Dutys of their Tobacco. And as Tobacco would then only be planted in Land proper for producing the best, It would, no doubt, make Returns in Cloathing as well as other goods at a cheaper Rate than they can be made in the Country, and by that means soon put a Stop to all Manufactures here that may interfere with those of our Mother Country. There are but two objections I can foresee against this Scheme, one is that it would lessen the quantity of tobacco and

consequently her Maj'tie's Revenue of Customs. The other, that the Encouraging Naval Stores so-much, would glut the Markett, and oblige the Queen to take more than are necessary for the use of the Navy. As to the first, the people must of necessity, lessen the quantity and employ their hands to other uses where they lose by their Labour in this, but whenever Tobacco comes again to be valuable, they will naturally fall into that Trade, which seems to be rooted in their Affections, and no Doubt there will be buyers enough for much more than the Country can import in a long time. There is one advantage which this Country has in relation to Naval Stores which none of her Majesty's other plantations enjoy, which is that the Trade for Tobacco will always deserve a good Convoy in time of War; whereby the Naval Stores carryed hence in those Fleets will be much safer from the Enemy than those in single Ships from the other plantations, which serve only to arm our Enemys at our own Cost. The production of Naval Stores will also remove the Temptation the Masters of Ships have for cutting and defacing the Tobacco hogsheads, since bales of hemp or Barrells of Pitch will be easily stored in those vacant places of the Ship where a hogshead cannot be put without great Injury, and that unjust practice quite extinguished against which the General Clamour made it necessary to pass a Law the Last Assembly, and with more advantage to the Owners in their Freight.

About twelve days ago, some of the Fleet that left England in December, arrived here, having been very much seperated and dispersed in the passage, the greater part of them are since come in together with the Tyger, one of the Convoys, but disabled in the Voyage by springing a Mast. The Reserve (which was Commodore) being in want of water, and several men sick, was forced to bear away to Barbadoes. I have received divers Letters sent in this Ship which the Commodore put on board one of the Merchant Ships at his parting with the Fleet, but finding none from Your Lord'ps, I concluded you had no particular commands to charge me with, and have, therefore, prorogued the Assembly to the 7th of November next, there being nothing of moment here that requires their meeting sooner.

VIRGINIA, May 5th, 1711.

To the Comm'rs of the Customs :

GENTLEMEN :

The Difficultys I have found in endeavouring to discover and punish the illegal Trading complained of from the Lower District of James River, to the Islands of Curracoa and St. Thomas, oblige me to represent to Y'r Hon'rs the necessity of a new Regulation of Your Officers here, in order to prevent more effectually such ill practices. To this purpose, I did last October, by advice of the Council of this Colony, propose to Collo. Quarry, the establishing a searcher in that District with a suitable Sallary, And have received his answer. That, Notwithstanding the great charge of Your Hon'rs are at, in maintaining Officers, he believed he could find a Retrenchment of about fourty pounds p annum for encouragement of such an Officer for that District, which as I formerly observed to Y'r Hon'rs is by its Situation, most commodious for carrying on that illegal Trade; but having since considered further of this matter, and discoursed it not only with the Council, but with several other Gentlemen of the Country, I find fourty pounds a year is too small an encouragement't for such a person as this Searcher ought to be. The Expence of boat and hands (which he must necessarily keep, to make him of any use) would cost him very near the money proposed. So that he must either be a Loser by the bargain, or be tempted to supply his want of Sallary, either by an unjust vexation of fair Traders, or a fraudulent Connivance with the illegal ones. Wherefore, that Your Hon'rs may have means to place an Officer above such temptations by allowing him a Compatent Sallary, without increasing the charge to her Majesty, I beg leave to make the following proposal. That instead of the two Collectors for James River, and one in York River, there may be one appointed to serve for both Rivers, and to reside at Williamsburgh, that being in the Center between both, and equally commodious for Traders to resort to as having the Conveniency of a navigable Creek from each River within the distance of little more than a mile. The present Sallary allowed to the Collector of the Lower District of James River, would, together with the perquisites arising from the entring and clearing of ships in both

Rivers, be a sufficient support for this Collector, and the Sallarys now paid to the other two Collectors, may, with a small Addition, be applyed towards the encouragement and support of two Surveyors and Searchers, Viz., one for Rappahannock and Potomack, and the other for York and James Rivers. It will be necessary for each of these Searchers to be provided with a Shallop or good Boat and hands to enable them to speak with all Vessells before they sail out of the Capes, to be impowered to examine the Certificates of clearing, and to be furnished with stilliards to weigh such hogsheads of Tobacco on board, as upon view of the Manifest of the Lading they suspect to be cleared at an under weight, and with all other powers requisite for making their Office effectual, particularly that they may when occasion requires, call for assistance from any of her Maj'tie's Ships of War, and to search for and make Seizure of any Tobacco they shall find taken on board there, in order to be exported without paying her Maj'tie's Duty, without such an Officer, or a greater Diligence in the Collectors, I cannot see how illegal Trade can be prevented, it being so easy for any Master of a Vessell to take in tobacco after he has cleared, without giving the Collector any acco't of it, or for one who looks upon a Custom house as so many words of form to enter his hogsheads at half the weight they contain, and more especially in that Lower District of James River, where the weakness, as well as negligence of the Collector gives too great encouragement to practise upon him. That your Hon'rs may have a Clearer view of the capacity of this Officer, I think it necessary to inform you that one Capt. Loft, Master of the Rebecca and Elizabeth of London, having in his passage from Jamaica, received much damage in a Storme, put in here some days ago to refitt; amongst other Accidents during the Storme, a Sea broke into the great Cabbin and staved a Desk where the Master kept all his papers, and in the Confusion usual on such occasions the Register and Certificate of clearing were missing; the Master went to Mr. Luke and told him his Case, who after he had looked into the quarterly List sent from your Board, and found that the ship had given bond there according to Law, and consequently was a fair Trader, advised the M'r to come and make Oath before me of his Disaster, and to draw a Protest for the Damages he had sustained, as is usual in such Cases. Yet while the Master was with me he seized the Ship,

under the pretence of her wanting a Register. I was a little surprised at his proceeding, when there was not the least suspicion of unfair dealing in the M'r, and writt him a letter wishing he would rather employ his diligence in the detecting illegal Traders than in giving unnecessary trouble to a fair Trader. But he seem'd to take it heinously that I should interpose in the business, and stood much in justification of the Seizure and of his Diligence in his Office, and insisted very sturdily to have the Ship brought to a Tryal, tho' at the same time the Master says he had the cuning to propose ways and means to discharge the Ship without it, if the Master had consented; he had his desire, and the Master being sufficiently alarmed with the Seizure made a stricter search for his papers, and at last found both his Register and Certificate, upon which the Ship was cleared by the Court of Vice Admiralty, tho' with a considerable expence of time and money; tho' Mr. Luke⁶⁸ is pleased to value himself very much on his diligence in his office, yet 'tis but a little while ago that a Sloop belonging to one Lear of that District was cleared out for Barbados, which was afterwards seized and condemned there, for carrying tobacco on board without having given bond or paid the Duty.

For my own part, I should be very willing to put the most favourable Construction upon the Conduct of one Your Hon'rs has thought fitt to intrust so long in that Office, if the many miscarriages which have happened in that District did not convince me that they are in a great measure owing to his incapacity and negligence, And I should ill discharge my trust, and deserve very little of that Confidence which I so much desire to preserve with Your Hon'rs, if I did conceal from you that I cannot be answerable for that District, while such an Officer has the management of it.

Since my last to Your Honours, I have taken opportunity by the Naval Officer of Potomack to advise Mr. Seymour what I expected of him before he entered upon his Office of Collector of that District. But I have heard nothing from him since, so that Mr. Allerton⁶⁹ continues still to act as Deputy Collector. About the beginning of March last, the Robinson Frigat of London sailed out of Rappahannock River, where she had been from the

⁶⁸ John Luke.

⁶⁹ Willoughby Allerton.

middle of August preceding. The Naval Officer had always informed me that that Ship had the Queen's Letter, and was not to be embargo'd, and I so far believed him in it, that I prepared my Letters with the proceedings of the late General Assembly here, to be sent by that Ship, as being the first Opportunity of Conveyance; but when she was Loaded, Collo. Corbin,⁷⁰ the Naval Officer of that District and a part Owner of the Ship, clear'd her without my knowledge, and she was even ready to sail out of Rappahannock River before I had the least notice of it. It was in vain that I writt to Collo. Corbin to let me know when the Ship would sail, and whether I might expect in her a Conveyance for my Letters, he would give me no other answer

⁷⁰ Col. Gawin Corbin, a member of the House of Burgesses and a representative of an ancient English family, the pedigree of which as recorded in the Herald's College, London, commences with Robert Corbion als Corbin, whose son Robert gave lands to the Abbey of Talesworth, between the years 1 and 7, Henry II, A. D., 1154-1161." From the last, sixteenth in descent, was Thomas¹ Corbin, of "Hall End," in the county of Warwick, England, born May 24th, 1594; died June, 1637, and was buried at "King's Swinford," the ancient seat of the family in Stafford, England. He married in 1620, Winifred, daughter of Gawin Grosvenor, of "Sutton Colfield," county Warwick. Of their issue of four sons and a daughter, Lettice,³ the third son, Henry,³ emigrated to Middlesex county, Virginia, died January 8, 1675, and was buried there. He married July 25th, 1645, Alice, daughter of Richard Eltonhead, of "Eltonhead," county Lancaster, England, and had issue:

I. Henry,³ died aged 2 years.

II. Thomas,³ of London, merchant, living unmarried in 1715.

III. Gawin,³ (of the text) of King and Queen county, Va., member of the House of Burgesses, who died some time after July, 1737. He married twice, first Catharine, daughter of Philip Wormeley, of Middlesex county, who died leaving no issue. He married secondly, ———, daughter and co-heir of John Lane, of York river, widow of Willis Wilson. He was living in 1715, and had issue: I. Richard,⁴ born 1708, living 1783; II. John,⁴ of "Porto Bacco," Va., born July 8, 1715; III. Alice,⁴ IV. Anne,⁴ V. Felicia,⁴

IV. Letitia,³ married Richard Lee, of Westmoreland county, Va. She died in 1707.

V. Alice,³ married Philip Lightfoot, of "Teddington," Middlesex county. She died in 1713.

VI. Winifred,³ married Leroy Griffin, of Virginia. She died about 1709.

VII. Anne,³ married Wm. Tayloe, of London, afterwards of Virginia. She died in 1694.

VIII. Frances,³ married Edmund Jenings, of "Rippon," county York, England, and of "Rippon," Va.; died in London, Nov. 22, 1713.

to either, but that the Ship was cleared, and was just upon sailing. It was to as little purpose that by a second Express, the 24th of February, I again writt to him, requesting to see the Queen's Letters, or the orders of her Majesty in Council, upon which he took upon him to clear Ships, for tho' he writt to me by the Return of the same Express, the 26th of that month, he took no notice of any such demand. The Ship sailed from Rapahannock, and on the 4th of March was stopped in Linhaven bay by my order, by one of the Guard-ships. Next day, one Major William Robinson, one of the Owners, and then a Passenger on board, came up to Williamsburgh, and because I had given Collo. Corbin directions some time before not to detain (as he had used to do) the Queen's Letters from the Masters of the Ships, since it was their Passport in case they should be forced into any other Port, I asked Mr. Robinson for the Queen's Letter on which the Ship was cleared, intending if she had none, to have stop'd her 'till she could have gone with Convoy, but upon his assuring me that the Ship had the Queen's Letter, and that it was left in Collo. Corbin's hands, I immediately delivered him my pacquets for the Ministry, and gave him Leave to sail.

Mr. Custis,⁷¹ who was Naval Officer of the Eastern shore,

⁷¹ The Calendar of Virginia State Papers, vol. i, pp. 92-93, gives a permit, of date June 2d, 1705, from "Han. Custis, Nav. off." of the Eastern Shore, who was doubtless the Mr. Custis of the text. The name of John Custis appears in the records of Northampton county as early as 1640. He is spoken of by Colonel Norwood in 1649 as having been a hotel-keeper in Rotterdam, and a great favorite with English travellers. He had issue a daughter who married Argall, son of Governor Francis Yeardley, of Virginia, and six sons, John, William and Joseph residents of Virginia, Thomas in Baltimore, Ireland, Robert in Rotterdam and Edmund in London. The family is of Irish descent. John Custis was an active, enterprising man; engaged in the manufacture of salt on one of the islands; foremost in all civil and ecclesiastical matters; appointed Major-General in 1676, in Bacon's Rebellion; called his estate on the Eastern Shore, which he received by his first wife, "Arlington," after Lord Arlington in the time of Charles II. His second wife was a daughter of Col. Edmund Scarborough. He had only one son, John. The latter had numerous children (among whom was probably "Han. Custis") whose descendants, together with those of his uncle William Custis, have filled the Eastern Shore with the name. His son John, fourth of the name, educated in England, inherited the "Arlington" estate. He was the John Custis who moved to Williamsburg and married the

having desired to be discharged of that employment, I have appointed Collo. William Waters⁷³ to succeed him, not upon any Sollicitation of his own, but at my request, he being a Gent of the best circumstances on that Shore, and living very convenient for executing that Office, but before I could prevail with him to accept of it I promised him my endeavours to make it more beneficial. It is a place of so little Trade, that the Receiver General assures me the greatest sum he has received from that District for the Virginia dutys doth not amount to 50 lb. ^{per} annum, taking one year with another, the Sallary whereof being the principal benefitt a Naval Officer has, is but 5 lb., which is a poor consideration for any Gentleman's trouble, who must besides give £2,000 Security for his place. I hope your Hon'rs will be pleased to make some addition to his profit by giving him the office of one of the Searchers on that Shore, of which I understand there are at present two settled, and I am sure no one can live more conveniently than he, nor according to the Character I have of him is likely to discharge it with more integrity and diligence. I should have been glad to have conveyed the advices I now send your Hon'rs by the Hands of Collo. Quarry, but the distance between us, and the want of a post for the Conveyance of Letters makes all Correspondence with him as difficult and rare as 'tis with England, which obliges me to write directly to your Board, and to give you more trouble than I should otherwise do.

Having received from Mr. Perry an account of the Resolutions Yo'r Hon'rs have taken in relation to the duty of the penny per pound in the hands of your Collectors here, I think myself obliged in the name of the Governors of the College (of which Society I am a Member) thankfully to acknowledge the favour you have been pleased to do them therein. I shall endeavour to make the Gentlemen concerned in the College sensible of the obligation, and I doubt not they will receive it as becomes them.

daughter of Colonel Daniel Parke, and was the father of him whose widow married General Washington.—*Meade's Old Churches and Families of Va.*, vol. i, pp. 262-3.

⁷³ Burgess from Northampton county in 1718.

VIRGINIA, July 15th, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth :

MY LORD:

I should not have given Yo'r Lord'p this trouble, when I must renew it so shortly by the Return of our Fleet, if the distracted State of Our Neighbor province of North Carolina did not oblige me to send Yo'r Lord'p the speediest Information of a Flame breaking out there,⁷³ which may without timely care endanger the peace of this her Majesty's Colony, as well as Compleat the ruine of that Settlement. Especially when the Ring-leaders of this Commotion talk as if they would act another Antigua Tragedy, and when some people are grown so desperate as to threaten to call down Indians to their Assistance.

That I may give Your Lord'p as far as I can, the true Rise of the present distractions in the Province of Carolina, It is necessary to observe that that Colony has been usually governed by a Deputy, Commissioned by the Governor of South Carolina. That one Collo. Thomas Cary was appointed Deputy Governor there under Sir Nathaniel Johnson, but was soon after suspended by order of the Lords proprietors themselves, and according to their Instructions, a President of the Council chosen to take the Administration, but this continued not long, before Collo. Cary, supported by the interest of the Quakers, and assisted by a Rabble of loose and profligate persons, turned out the President, and most of the Council, and assumed on himself the Government.

⁷³Wheeler (History of North Carolina, pp. 35-36) gives the following account of these dissensions: Thomas Cary was appointed Deputy Governor by Sir Nathaniel Johnson. The Lords Proprietors disapproved of the choice and directed their deputies to select one of their own number as Governor. Wm. Glover was selected. Cary had been Collector of the rents of the Lords Proprietors and had neglected to settle his accounts. For awhile Cary seemed to yield to the sway of Glover; but aided by his friends, he seized the records of the province, and proclaimed himself governor. Anarchy ensued. A General Assembly was called which met at Capt. Heckelfield's, on Little River, to decide the vexed question. Members appeared under writs of election severally issued by Glover and Cary. Great confusion prevailed, and the partisans of Glover had to take refuge in Virginia. At this period Edward Hyde arrived with the Commission of Lieut. Governor, but Cary refused to yield. Then follow in brief the details given by Spotswood.

Mr. Edward Hyde, being appointed by the Lords proprietors to be their Deputy Governor arrived here last summer, but before his arrival, Collo. Tynte, from whom he was, according to the constitution of that Government, to receive his commission, dyed, So that he found himself thrown into a Country without any Authority or Credentials, except some private letters from the Lords proprietors. However, he managed them so well, and gave the Council such satisfaction of his being intended their Governor, that all who pretended to any share in the Government, and Cary in particular, petitioned him to take on him the Administration as President of the Council untill his Commission as Governor should arrive. He was unanimously chosen conformable to the Constitution of that Country⁷⁴ and Sworne President of the Council, and continued to act as such untill the meeting of the Assembly, that Collo. Cary and his party finding themselves outdone in the choice of Representatives, and fearing to be called to account for many unwarrantable Actions and Oppressions of which they had been guilty, protested against the Assembly, as not called by lawfull authority; upon which the Assembly Ordered him and some of his Accomplices to be taken into Custody, but he soon made his escape from thence, and having together a Company of about 60 men, stood in defiance of their Authority. They proceeded to pass a Law to oblige them to render an account to the Lords proprietors of the money he had received for their dues, and which he had refused to pay for support of the Palatines according to their order, and added some other Clauses (perhaps) too severe to be justified, which, indeed, shewed more their resentment of the Injuriys they received from Mr. Cary during his Usurpation (as they call it) than their prudence to heal the distractions of the Country, but they soon found their power too weak to inforce the execution of the Laws they had passed; for when they went to apprehend Collo. Cary, they found he had so considerable a number of armed men, and had fortified himself with great guns and other warlike preparations, that they durst not attack him.

⁷⁴ He was appointed governor the next year and issued his proclamation January, 1712, granting pardon to all the late insurgents, except Thomas Cary, John Porter and three others. He died of yellow fever Sept. 8, 1712, and his widow removed to Virginia.

Mr. Cary did not long content himself to stand on the Defensive, but having gathered together what Force he could, declared himself President, fitted out a Brigantine carrying six guns, with a Barco longo, and came to attack Mr. Hyde and his Council, who found themselves too weak to oppose him. I received repeated applications from them to send them some assistance for their protection, Whereupon, with the advice of her Majesty's Council here, it was judged the best way to putt an end to these distractions, to offer my Mediation to both partys, intending to persuade Mr. Hyde to suspend the severity of those Acts passed against Mr. Cary untill their Masters, the Lords proprietors should signify their pleasure, and not doubting but that when that was once obtained, Mr. Cary would be contented to sit quiet and suffer the Government to go on in the way he himself had agreed to, and to this purpose, I writt both to Mr. Hyde and him, the letters of which the Copys are inclosed, and sent thither a Gentleman,⁷⁵ as well qualified as any I could find here, for moderating the Resentments of both partys. Mr. Hyde and his Council, at the first Offer, joyfully embraced the Mediation, declaring that for the peace of the Country, they were most ready to yield to any terms which could with justice and honour be proposed to them ; but Mr. Cary obstinately rejected all peaceable means of accommodation, and warned the Mediation to retire, for he was resolved to treat no otherway than with arms. 'Tis true, he at first pretended to accept the Mediator, but soon shewed that he intended to make no other use of it than to carry on his design of siezing Mr. Hyde and his Council at an unarmed Enterview, which he, in violation of his engagements, treacherously attempted to execute. Tho' this was enough to shew how little Faith ought to have been given to any treaty with him or his party ; Yet, the gentleman I had sent thither, went again, to him and urged him to declare what his demands were, but 'twas a long time before he could obtain of him any such declaration. At last he shewed a paper containing his demands, but

⁷⁵ John Clayton, a burgess from James City county in 1723 ; Attorney General of the Colony in 1724 ; Judge of the Court of Admiralty ; died November 18, 1737, in his 72nd year. A MSS. Volume of his opinions has been preserved, and is in the possession of a descendant, Mr. Jasper Clayton, of Chesterfield Co. His son, Thomas Clayton, M. D., "a learned and ingenious gentleman," died in Gloucester County, Virginia, in October, 1739.

was very unwilling to give any copy of it, and when a copy was taken, he absolutely refused to sign it. Notwithstanding all which, Mr. Hyde and his Council were very willing to agree to every one of these demands, with some little Alteration, and this was signified to Mr. Cary by one of his greatest Confidants; but all that would not content him, nor would he tell what else he would be at. All hopes of accommodation being now desperate, and Mr. Cary having advanced with his Brigantine and other Vessells (carrying a Flag at his top-mast head) within Gun shott of the place where Mr. Hyde and his Council lay, and threatening to attack them, they repeated their applications to me for a speedy Assistance. Having therefore called together the Council here, and advised with them what was proper to be done in this Juncture, they were unanimously of Opinion that no other Course could be taken than forthwith to assist Mr. Hyde and his Council with what Force Could be spared out of this Colony, conformable to her Majesty's Commission and Instructions, which both impower and direct me to send Assistance to any of her Maj'ty's plantations that shall be in distress, upon the application of their Governors, and that this was so much the more necessary in the present case because it was not easy to foresee how far a party of men of such desperate Circumstances would carry their Madness, if they should meet with Success in their first attempt, and that the fatal Rebellion in this Country, which formerly cost the Crown a great expence of Treasure to quell, sprung at first from less dangerous appearances. And that it was very probable they would endeavor to seduce our Negros to join with them since they had already taken by force, some belonging to the Inhabitants of this Country, and employed them on board their Vessells. In pursuance of this advice, I ordered the Militia of our ffrontier Countys to draw together, intending to carry a Detachment of them into Carolina. And because Mr. Cary's chief strength consisted in his Brigantine and other Vessells w'ch he had filled with armed men, I endeavoured to obtain some help of Marines and Boats from her Majesty's Ship of War here, but the Comodore of the homeward bound Fleet judging it the least part of his duty to do any Service to this Country, refused to afford me any such assistance. In the meantime Collo. Cary endeavoured to Land a party of his men to seize upon Mr. Hyde and his Council while he

attacked them with his Canon from his Brigantine; but finding they were like to meet with resistance from the few men Mr. Hyde had drawn together, that Rab[b]le which are more spirited by the hopes of plunder than principles of honour, gave over their attempt, and Mr. Cary having quitted his Brigantine, is retired to a remote part of that Country whither it is impracticable to march the militia from hence over so many Rivers without the Conveniency of Water carriage.

I hear he is gathering together a greater force, and threatens to bring down the Tuscaruro Indians to his assistance. I have sent what Marines could be spared from our Guardships, in hopes that that will fright the people from joining with him when they see their Government will be assisted from hence. And if I find that will not do, I shall, notwithstanding the difficultys I have mentioned to your Lord'p, endeavour to stop the progress of these Commotions, tho' 'tis no small concern to me to discover in some of our Countys bordering on Carolina a sort of Reluctancy to that Undertaking; but as they are the very Countys which are ye most stockt with Quakers, I must impute it to the Artifices of those people, especially seeing their brethren are Cary's main Allies, who not only formally act as his Council, and openly provide him with provisions and an armed Brigantine, but do also take upon themselves Military titles in this Civil War.

I shall reserve the further account of these Commotions till the departure of our Fleet, now under an Embargo, pursuant to her Majesty's Commands, signified to me by Gov'r Hunter,⁷⁶

⁷⁶ Colonel Robert Hunter, governor of New York. In 1707 he was appointed Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, but never acted as such, being captured by the French on his voyage over and carried a prisoner to Paris. During his stay there he corresponded with Swift, who it appears had been suspected of being the author of the famous letter concerning enthusiasm, usually printed in Lord Shaftesbury's *Characteristics*, but which was really written by Hunter. The original commission of Hunter as Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia, dated April 4th, 1707, is in the Collections of the Virginia Historical Society, to which it was presented by Charles P. Greenough, Esq., Boston, Mass. It is an imposing document, in Latin script, on vellum measuring two feet by two feet six inches. It bears the portrait of George, Prince of Denmark, Lord of the Admiralty (by whom it was issued), and various ornamentation.

Hunter, returning to England, was made governor of New York, and was sent thither in 1710, with 2,700 expatriated Palatines, to settle that colony. He

which will expire with this month. Had I found the Assistance I expected from the men of War, my next might have brought Y'r Lo'p the news of the total extinction of this Flaim, which now may spread much further; but this is not the only Disappointment the obstinacy of the Commodore has occasioned to her Majesty's service. For Collo. Hunter having writt very pressingly to me in pursuance of her Majesty's Orders to buy up for the use of her Majesty's Forces in the Expedition to Canada what pork could be had here, because provisions were Scarce in the Neighbouring Governments. After I had secured all in this Country, I intended to have sent to Carolina to purchase what I could there, which might have been brought from thence without any charge to the Queen in the same boats that carryed thither the Marines. But for want of that Conveniency, I was obliged to give over the thought of getting any provisions from thence; the Commodore could not be ignorant of this service, seeing I made a Journey of 40 miles on purpose to concert the Project with him, and he seemed then to approve it, but if the representing under my hand an apparent service to the Queen, backed with the unanimous opinion of her Council, be not a sufficient justification to the Captains of these Men of War to assist therein, then I must confess I was to blaim to expect it on this Occasion.

I have only been able to purchase about 700 barrells of pork in this Colony, which yet, is three times as much as all the Revenue her Majesty has in bank here will discharge. For the rest I have engaged my own Credit rather than her Majesty's Service shall suffer, and I hope your Lord'p will be pleased to interpose Your interest that the Bills for it be answered at the Treasury.

returned to England in 1719, but on the accession of George II, was reinstated in the government of New York and New Jersey. The climate not agreeing with him, he obtained instead the government of Jamaica, arriving there in February, 1727. He died March 31, 1734. He was a scholar and a wit, and the friend of Addison as well as Swift; and in addition to the letter mentioned, wrote a farce called "Androboros."

VIRGINIA, July 25th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade:

MY LORDS:

Since my last of the 20th of March (of which I here send a Duplicate) I have been hon'rd with your Lord'ps' of the 26th of October and 9th of November, and shall proceed to answer them before I enter upon any new relation of the affairs of this Colony. In obedience to your Lord'ps' commands I hear send a transcript of the several proceedings in Council in relation to the selling the quit-rents. By these your Lord'ps will be informed upon what grounds the method of sale by inch of Candle prescribed in her Majesty's Instructions came to be altered. I have also subjoined a Copy of a Letter from Collo. Byrd, her Majesty's Receiver General, containing some additional Reasons why a publick sale is less beneficial than the method now in use, and since the former practice has been altered, upon the experience of its inconveniency, I must joine in opinion for continuing the present, unless a greater inconveniency appears therein. I have examined the several tables of Fees sent me by the respective Officers in this Colony and find them all agreeable to the several Laws by which they were established, and I am the more confirmed in the opinion that they are within the bounds of Moderation, because I have not heard that there has ever been any complaint of their Exorbitancy. I have used my utmost endeavours to detect the persons accused of illegal trading to Curacoa and St. Thomas's but have not been able to discover anything whereon to ground a prosecution. The books of the Custom-house Officers give no Light into the matter, and neither the Masters nor Mariners employed in those Vessells being Inhabitants of this Country, nor to be found here, I'm also disappointed of the discoveries which might have been expected from them. Mr. Conner, the Owner of one of those Vessells, has been with me with great professions of his innocence. He says his Vessell neither carryed tobacco in Curracoa nor brought any European Comoditys from thence, and that for avoiding all future suspitions he is resolved never to trade again to that Island. It is very probable that tobacco may be taken on board by the Masters without the knowledge of the Owners, and after their

clearing with the Custom-house Officers, which cannot be prevented any other way than by having a Watchful Eye on the Vessells while they are Lading and searching them after they are cleared. I have, with the advice of the Council, proposed to the Comm'r's of the Customs, as the best means to prevent such Frauds, the Establishing two searchers for this Bay, furnished with shallops or good boats and hands, which may be continually running into the little Rivers and Creeks where such small Vessells load and Cruising in the bay for Examining them after they are cleared. And that this may be done without any additional charge to her Majesty, I have also proposed the reducing of the three Collectors now established for York and James Rivers, to one for both, and he to live at Williamsburgh, which is the Center between both Rivers, and equally convenient for either, and that the Salaries of the other two Collectors be applied towards the support of those searchers, which in my opinion will prove more usefull Officers for preventing illegal Trade. I could heartily wish what your Lord'ps seem to expect in relation to the building of a ffort at Point Comfort could suit with the disposition and ability of the Country to perform. But when I proposed to your Lord'ps the building that Fort, I knew very well it would be in vain to expect the least Assurance from the Assembly, unless they were first assured they should not be charged with the maintainance of a Garrison, which is an annual expence they will never be prevailed with to lay on the Country, however necessary it may be for its Security. But if that point were once over I should not doubt engaging them to contribute to the building the Fort, the charge whereof, I'm still of opinion will be but inconsiderable in Comparison of a regular Fortification, it being designed rather as something resembling a Land-guard Fort than a Bergen ~~or~~ Zoom.⁷⁷

As to the project of the Iron mines, concerning which I received the signification of your Lord'ps' pleasure in a letter from your Secretary the 29th of January last, I have in my former given your Lord'ps an account how that design was laid aside by the Assembly, and have offered my thoughts how it may be made more beneficial for her Majesty's service and the Trade of

⁷⁷ If a technical term, this must be a very old one, and long since obsolete, as none of the dictionaries of military science of the present century, accessible to the editor, contain it.

Great Britain, upon w^{ch} I hope to receive yo^r Lord^{ps}' further commands. I herewith transmitt to yo^r Lord^{ps} the Journals of Council from the 19th of March last, on which I shall only trouble yo^r Lord^{ps} with these few Remarks. That having by a proclamation issued last December, given Liberty to all persons to take up Land upon the conditions in her Majesty's Instructions. It happened through the interfering of Entrys that divers persons made pretentions to the same piece of Land, for determining of which it was thought necessary to Establish the several Rules mentioned in the — page of the Council Journal, which I hope will not be unacceptable to Your Lord^{ps} since they have given such satisfaction to the people, and all Controversys upon those Entrys are thereby entirely accommodated. That the directions I gave for restraining the unlimited granting of Rights before the persons desiring them had made appear to me his Ability to cultivate the Land claimed, is readily complied with, will appear by the several applications on the Journal, And that I have, with equal satisfaction and less charge to the people, taken the granting of Lapsed and Escheated Land out of the hands of the Gen^l Court (where it has been a long time improperly placed,) and brought all applications of that nature to the Governor in Council, as a more proper Channel to dispense the favor of the Crown. Notwithstanding the objections made against the terms of granting Land mentioned in her Majesty's Instructions and the positive Opinion of some that none would be taken upon these Conditions, There have been considerable quantitys entered for, since the publication of these Instructions and patents signed on the same terms last April for much larger quantity's heretofore surveyed. I hope this will be an argument against further Clamours on that head, and hinder any applications from the Assembly for altering that Instruction, especially if her Majesty shall be pleased to allow patents to issue for all Lands entered and Surveyed before the death of Colo. Nott, according to what I proposed to Y^r Lord^{ps} in my letter of the 18th of December.

Your Lord^{ps} will perceive by the accounts herewith sent her Majesty's Revenue both of the Quitt-rents and 2s. ^{per} hogshead are Sunk, of late. This is occasioned by the declining price of Tobacco for several years Successively, which hath Discouraged people from offering any considerable price for the former, or shipping off their own tobacco for advancing the latter, and many

having chosen rather to keep their tobacco in the Country under the danger of spoiling, than venture to ship it, and run the hazard of its bringing them in Debt. The account of the Quitt-rents has received this last year an addition of near 10,000 acres of concealed Land, there hath been no new Land granted in that time, and I hope to see that Revenue much more considerably advanced by means of the Act passed last Session of Assembly. I know not whether Your Lord'ps have yet had Leisure to reflect on the advantages her Majesty will receive by that Clause of it w^{ch} makes 3 years Non-payment of the Quitt-rents a Forfeiture of the Land, but the people here begin to perceive that will prove so effectual a remedy against all the Evasions wherewith they have hitherto been able to conceal their Land, That some have proposed to me to move her Majesty to accept of a reasonable Fine or Composition for altering their Tenures and giving them new patents, upon the terms of paying a small Acknowledgment in lieu of the present annual Quit-rent. But this being an Overture on which I have not yet had time to forme a Judgment, I shall neither encourage nor discontinue it untill I receive Yo'r Lord'ps' directions.

Collo. Hunter, Governor of New York, having signified to me that he had received her Ma'ty's commands to buy up a great quantity of provision for the subsistence of the Forces sent to Canada and that there was not enough to be had in that or the Neighbouring Government which might prove of the last ill consequence to that Service, I have used such diligence that I have now upwards of 700 barrells of of pork ready to ship off from this Country, And I believe I have not left one barrell of sound Pork, besides this great demand happened at a time when I had no Assembly to set a rate on this Commodity. I have taken such measures that there is little of this bought at a higher price than I myself gave last Christmass, when provisions were at the cheapest. The price of the pork was to be paid out of the Quitt-rents, as far as it would go, and the rest in bills on the Lords of the Treasury, which Collo. Hunter says he is impowered to draw. But Y'r Lord'ps will find by the Q-rent account how little that will discharge; so that I have been obliged to engage my own Credit for the remainder, the people being unwilling to take Collo. Hunter's bills, which they did not know how to negotiate at the

Treasury. Capt. Smith, of her Majesty's Ship Enterprize attending this Government, hath had the good fortune to take at the Capes a French prisoner of 88 men belonging to Petit-guarms [sic]. The prisoners have been subsisted here ever since the 7th of June, and I have chosen rather to send them by this Fleet to England, where they may be Exchanged for as many of her Majesty's subjects, than to transport them to their own Island by a Flag of Truce, being resolved on my part to prevent all manner of suspicion of an unlawfull Correspondence with her Majesty's Enemys, as well as to endeavour by all means to prevent it in others. Having now given your Lord'ps the present State of the Affairs of this Colony I should not have added to your Lord'ps' trouble if the unhappy Commotions in our Neighbouring province of Carolina did not oblige me to represent the same as a matter that may very sensibly affect the peace of this Colony, without the application of proper remedys. One Collo. Thomas Cary, being some years ago appointed Deputy Governor of North Carolina under S'r Nathaniel Johnson,⁷⁸ was afterwards removed by an order of the Lord proprietors and a President chosen to take on him the administration. But it was not long before Mr. Cary, being joined by certain Quakers intrusted by the proprietors in some part of the Administration, gathered together a Rabble of the looser sort of people and by force of arms turned out the President and most of the Council, and by his own Authority assumed the administration of the Government. In the meantime the Lords prop'rs appointed Collo. Tynte Governor of South and North Carolina, and Mr. Edward Hyde to be Deputy Governor of the Northern province, who was to receive his Commission from the former. Mr. Hyde arrived here last Summer, but before his arrival Collo. Tynte died. So that he found himself thrown into a Country without any power or Credentials, except some private Letters from some of the Lords.

⁷⁸ Sir Nathaniel Johnson was Governor of North and South Carolina 1703-9. He died in 1713. He had some martial experience; had been a Member of Parliament; and from 1686 to 1689 was Governor of Nevis, St. Christopher's, Montserrat and Antigua. When South Carolina was invaded by the French, in 1706, he defeated the enemy with the loss of their commander, Le Feboure, and 300 men. To him is ascribed the merit of first introducing the cultivation of silk in the provinces, in 1703. He also gave encouragement to grape culture and the making of wine.

proprieters. However, by these he gave so good Satisfaction of his being the intended Governor for that province, that every one of the persons that could pretend to have Deputations from the Lords prop'rs, and among the rest Collo. Cary, joined and signed a petition to him to take the administration as President of the Council untill his Commission of Governor should arrive; accordingly he was sworn; he proceeded to settle Courts of Justice, which had been interrupted during the Course of the former troubles, and called an Assembly; but Mr. Cary and those of his party, finding their interest decline, and fearing to be called to account for many unwarrantable actions and Oppressions whereof they have been guilty, began to find fault with their own election, protested against the meeting of the Assembly as not being called by Lawfull Authority, and endeavoured to stir up the people to through [sic] off their Obedience to the established Government. Upon which the Assembly Ordered Mr. Cary and some of the Chief of that party to be taken into Custody, and proceeded to pass a Law obliging Mr. Cary to account to the Proprietors for the dues which he had refused to pay for the Subsistence of the Palatine according to their Order, and added some other Clauses, perhaps too severe to be justified, and wherein it must be confessed they shewed more their Resentment of their ill usage during Mr. Cary's Usurpation (as they call it) than their prudence to reconcile the distractions of the Country, but of this Y'r Lord'ps will better judge by the Copys of the Laws and Addresses which are here enclosed. 'Twas not long before they found their power was too weak to enforce the Execution of the Laws they had passed, for Mr. Cary having made his escape out of Custody, had again Recourse to his old Friends the Mobb, of which he drew together so great a number and fortified his house with great Guns and other Warlike Stores, that when the Governor had taken a Resolution to apprehend him, they found it impracticable to attempt it. Mr. Cary did not long content himself to stand on the Defensive, but fitting out a Briganteen of six Guns, furnished him by a Leading Quaker of that province, with some other Vessells equipped in a Warlike manner, he again declared himself Presid't, and went to attack Mr. Hyde and his Council at a place to which they had retired for their safety. It was then I received pressing Application from them for Assistance from hence to enable 'em to defend

themselves against this Insurrection. Whereupon, having advised with the Council, it was thought fitt in the first place to offer my Mediation for accommodating their differences, believing that Mr. Hyde would be prevailed on to suspend the severity of the Laws against Mr. Cary till the Proprietors' pleasure were known, and that this being once obtained, Collo. Cary would be contented to sitt quiet and suffer the Government to go on in the way to which he himself had agreed. Accordingly I sent a Gentleman very fully qualified for transacting an Affair of that Nature, to offer my Mediation to both partys, and writt to them the Letter (of which I also send a copy) to be delivered him in case he rejected the former, intending that if fair means would not prevail on him he might at least be frighted into Compliance by the expectation of a Superior Force from hence. Mr. Hyde and his Council readily embraced the Offer made them, declaring themselves ready to yield to any terms that could, in justice or reason be expected of them, but Mr. Cary obstinately rejected all offers of accommodation. 'Tis true, at first, he made a Show of accepting the Mediation, but soon shewed that he had no other intention in it than to sieze on Mr. Hyde and his Council by drawing them to an interview, separated from their guards, which he treacherously attempted to put into execution in Violation of his own promise and agreem't. After his Disappointment in this Design he would never after agree to any place of Conference where Mr. Hyde could rely on the safety of his person. He was with great difficulty persuaded to declare what his Demands were, and after a copy of them was obtained, positively refused to set his hand to it, and tho' he had notice given him by the Gentleman I sent thither that every one of his Demands would be agreed to with some necessary Explanations, even that would not content him, but he warned the Mediator to retire, for he was resolved to treat no otherwise than with arms. Matters being now come to the last Extremity, Mr. Hyde and his Council again pressed for Assistance by a Joint Letter, of which I send your Lord'ps the copy, and having had the unanimous Opinion of her Maj'ty's Council here, that there was now no other way left but that of Force to put a Stop to this Dangerous Insurrection, and that it was conformable to her Majesty's Instructions to assist Mr. Hyde and those in the legal Administration of that Government, I thereupon Ordered the Militia of our Frontier Countys to draw

together, designing to march a detachment of them into Carolina, and at the same time to obtain a Reinforcement of Marines from her Majesty's Ships of War here, to be sent in their boats to the Sound of Chowan to secure the Briganteen and armed Vessells with which Collo. Cary has been enabled to insult the Government and Overawe the people, but the Comodore of the Homeward bound Fleet, judging it the least part of his duty to do any service to this Country, positively refused to afford me any Assistance, either of men or boats, tho' upon my first Communication of that project to him he seemed to approve it, and that I also represented to him how serviceable his boats might prove in transporting the pork I had ordered to be bought up in Carolina for the Queen's service. And 'tis only owing to that disappointment that I have been obliged to lay aside the thoughts of getting any pork from thence, which I wish may not be a disadvantage to her Majesty's service in another place. In the meantime, I received advice that Mr. Cary had attempted to put in execution his chief design of seizing Mr. Hyde and his Council. That he endeavoured to land a party of his men, while at the same time he attack'd them with his Canon from his Brigantine, but finding he was like to meet with some Resistance, and the courage of his Mobb not being so great in action as in imagination, he gave over the Attempt, and is since retired to a remote part of that Country, whither it is impracticable to march the Militia from hence to attack him. He is there gathering a greater Force, and threatens to bring down the Tuscaruro Indians to his Assistance. I have sent what Marines could be spared from our Guard-ships to the Assistance of that Government, in hopes by that means to satisfy the people that they are mistaken in what their Quaker politicians had infused into them that this Government had no authority nor would ever meddle in their Quarrells, And if this will not do, I shall still endeavour (Notwithstanding the almost insuperable difficultys of marching Forces into a Country so cutt with great Rivers and without any Conveniency of Water-carriage) to put an effectual stop to those Confusions which give so great apprehensions to her Majesty's Subjects of this Colony, who reflect that the fatal Rebellion⁷⁹ raised here which cost the Crown a great expence of Treasure to quell, sprung from much

⁷⁹ That known as Bacon's Rebellion, in 1676.

less dangerous appearances, especially since Mr. Cary has plainly threatened to act another Antigua Tragedy, to w^{ch} his own desperate Circumstances and the wretched Crew he has got together seem like enough to prompt him. [It is no small concern to me to find in two or three of our Frontier Countys where the Quakers have got the greatest Footing, such a Reluctancy to undertake anything against Cary and his party, which I understand is owing to the Crafty Insinuations of that sort of people who not only have been the principal Fomenters of the Distractions in Carolina, but make it their business to instill the like pernicious notions into the minds of her Majesty's Subjects here, and to justify all the mad actions of that Rabble by such arguments as are destructive to all Government.] I think it necessary on this occasion to represent to Y^r Lord^{'ps} how ill this Country is provided for its defence either against a Foreign Enemy or intestine Commotion. The powder which her Majesty sent hither some years ago, is so much wasted that one cannot depend upon its doing execution at even half distance. I beg Y^r Lord^{'ps} will be pleased to move her Majesty for a fresh supply, and that in the meantime the Admiralty may give orders to the Captains of her Majesty's Ships of War coming hither to exchange from time to time some of their fresh powder for some of ours, which will be as proper for their use for Signals, Salutes and their Watch guns.

The Confusions in Carolina have hindered the meeting of the Commissioners for Settling the boundaries, but as soon as the Affairs of that Country attain to any tolerable Settlement, I shall press them all I can to come to a conclusion, and hope by the next conveyance I shall be able to give a good account of that Affair. I am, &c.

KIQUOTAN, July 28th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade:

MY LORDS:

Since I came hither to dispatch the Fleet, I have received advice that upon the Marines I sent to Carolina, the heads of that mutinous Rabble there are fled and dispersed, and that there is now great hopes that the Country will be again be

restored to peace, the Assembly and Courts of justice beginning to resume their functions without fear of further disturbance. The Commissioners for settling the boundarys are just now mett, and I hope they will conclude that Affair before they separate, so that I may be able by the next Opportunity to lay their proceedings before Your Lord'ps. There are now further discoveries made of the ill designs of Collo. Cary and his party, there being several Affidavits sent in hither to prove that Mr. Porter, one of Mr. Cary's pretended Council was with the Tuscaruro Indians endeavoring by promises of great Rewards to engage them to cut off all the Inhabitants of that part of Carolina that adhered to Mr. Hyde. The Indians own the proposal was accepted by their young men, but that their old men who have the greatest Sway in their Counsels being of their own Nature suspicious that there was some trick intended them, or else directed by a Superior providence, refused to be concerned in that barbarous design.

VIRGINIA, July 28th, 1711.

To the Comm'rs of the Customs:

GENTLEMEN:

After the trouble I gave you of so long a Letter as my last (of which the enclosed is a Duplicate) I shall endeavour to make amends by the shortness of this, and shall therefore only mention that finding too much cause to be dissatisfyed with the conduct of Mr. Corbin, Naval Officer of Rappahannock River, I have removed him from that Office, and have appointed in his stead Mr. Christopher Robinson, a gentleman of good character and estate who lives very convenient for executing that Trust, and I doubt not he will make himself acceptable to your Board by giving such security as you shall approve of.⁸⁰

⁸⁰ Christopher, the son of Christopher Robinson (born at Cleasby, Yorkshire, England, 1645; one of the original trustees of William and Mary College; Secretary of the colony of Virginia; died 1693; married, 1st, Agatha Obert; 2d, Catharine, daughter of Theo. Hone and widow of Robert Beverley, of

The act of Assembly made here about six years ago for measuring of Ships in order to the payment of the Tonnage having been disallowed by her Majesty, I obtained a new Law to be passed at the last Session of Assembly establishing the rule of Admeasurement proposed by Your Hon'rs; but some doubts arising whether the Upper or Lower deck of a Merchant Ship ought to be the Gun Deck, I have thereupon given direction to the Naval Officers to measure all Ships and Vessells by their main Deck, untill Your Hon'rs shall signify your opinion therein. Concluding that thereby I should treat them all with the like justice, since that a single deckt Ship cannot expect to be measured any other way, besides that the Masters will better know where to apply for a surplusage to be refunded, than the Naval Officers for a deficiency to be allowed; but if I have mistaken your meaning, I hope you'll let me know it by the first Opportunity. I'm persuaded Y'r Hon'rs will look upon the Naval Officers as persons acting in the same interest with your Collectors, and on that account I hope you will furnish them with the same helps for the better discharge of their Duty, by Sending them books of Rates, and all such acts of parliament as relate to Trade. For when the Naval Officers are once upon that Foot, I can then oblige him that happens to be removed, to deliver up to his successor all those Books and Acts, whereas, at present the new appointed Officers makes but a shift to obtain to the knowledge of his Duty, by copying and borrowing until he has sent to London and received thence a Supply. I believe Yo'r Hon'rs' intentions that the quarterly Lists both from the Collectors and Naval Officers should Commence and end at one and ye sametime; but because there is now a Fleet going out, and that it may be necessary for Y'r Hon'rs' information that the Lists now sent should Comprehend all the Ships homeward bound, I have desired the Naval Officers to continue their Lists to the — of this month, being the latest time for clearing, and that for the future their lists both for entering and Clearing be regulated according to the

Virginia), was born in 1681, and died in 1727; a vestryman of Christ Church parish, Middlesex county, in 1726; married Judith, daughter of Christopher Wormeley, a Councillor of Virginia, and widow of Wm. (the son of Robert) Beverley, and before that of Corbin Griffin, Esq. She died in 1720. A Genealogy of the Robinsons of Virginia, was published by the present writer in the *Richmond Standard*, March 19-25, 1881.

quarterly Trade, and to continue this method till Your Hon'rs think fitt to direct otherwise, assuring you that your commands shall be carefully observed in that or whatever else concerns her Majesty's Service and the Trade of the Colony.

VIRGINIA, July 28th, 1711.

To the Lords of the Treasury :

MY LORDS :

According to what I had the honour to write to Y'r Lord'ps the 6th of March last I here send the account of her Majesty's Revenue of Quitt-rents for the year 1710, with that of the two shillings a hogshead, ending the 20th of this month.

Y'r Lord'ps may observe that the Quitt-rents Account of this year has received an addition of above 1,000 acres of concealed Land, for there has not been any new Land granted in that time, and I confidently hope to see that Revenue in a few years much more considerably advanced, not only by the means of some Clauses which I happily prevailed upon our Assembly to admitt of in an Act passed here the last Session, but also by some other projects I have in view for the discovery of Lands which many people in this Colony have hitherto held without paying Quitt-rents for the same.

There is one Clause particularly in that act, making the Non-payment of Quitt-rents for three years a forfeiture of the Land, which will prove of great Advantage to that Revenue, and I find the people begin to perceive this will be so effectual a remedy against the Evasions they heretofore used for concealing their Lands that some have proposed to me to move her Majesty to accept of any reasonable Fine or Composition for granting them new patents under the tenure of a small acknowledgment in lieu of the present annual Quitt-rent. I shall forbear troubling your Lord'ps with the other schemes I have in view until I can withall give some account of their success, whereof I have a fair prospect from my good fortune (which I think is singular in these parts) to agree perfectly well with the people I have the Hon'r to Govern. In the meantime, I beg Yo'r Lord'ps to believe it my

fix'd Resolution to improve this Union as much as I am able, to the advantage of her Majesty's Service. About the beginning of this month I received advice from Collo. Hunter, Governor of New York, that her Majesty had directed him to buy up a great quantity of provisions for the Service of the Forces sent to Canada, and that provisions being scarce in the Neighbouring Governments, he therefore pressingly desired me to purchase all the pork that could be had here, to be paid out of her Majesty's Revenue of this Colony as far as that would go, and the rest by bills on y'r Lord'ps, which he says he is impowered to draw. I have used such diligence that I have now above 700 barrells of Pork ready to ship off, and believe there's scarce one barrell of sound pork in the country besides, notwithstanding this great demand, and that I had no Assembly sitting to put a rate on that Commodity, and I have taken such measures that there's very little of this bought at a higher price than what I paid myself last Christmass, when all provisions were at the cheapest. And I hope this piece of Frugality will be some place with your Lord'ps to order the ready payment of what I have purchased on my own Credit where her Majesty's Revenue proved defective, according to the bills that shall be drawn Collo. Hunter or Collo. Nicholson⁸⁰ for my re-imbursement. I must do justice to Collo. Byrd, her Majesty's Receiver Gen'll, by representing to your Lord'ps the Zeal and readiness he has showed on this, as on all other Occasions for her Majesty's Service. Whereupon, I beg leave to recommend him to your Lord'ps' favour in the pretensions he has to lay before you.

⁸⁰ Francis Nicholson, by profession a soldier, Lieutenant-Governor of New York under Andros in 1697-8, of Virginia 1690-2 and 1699-1705; and of Maryland, 1694-99. In 1710 he was commander of the forces that captured Port Royal, October 2d. He returned to England to urge another attempt on Canada, taking with him five Iriquois chiefs, who were presented to Queen Anne. He also commanded the unsuccessful expedition of the next year. From October 12th, 1712, to August, 1717, he was Governor of Nova Scotia. He was knighted in 1720; Governor of South Carolina 1721-5; returned to England in June, 1725, and was made a lieutenant-general. Author of "An Apology or Vindication of Francis Nicholson, Governor of South Carolina,"—London, folio, 1724; "Journal of an Expedition for the Reduction of Port Royal,"—London, quarto, 1711; died, London, March 5th, 1728.

VIRGINIA, July 28th, 1711.

To the Lords Proprietors of Carolina :

MY LORDS:

Your Lord'ps will no doubt receive from divers hands an account of the distractions in your province of North Carolina, and therefore I shall not enter into the detail of that Affair any further than what concerns the part I have had in Endeavouring to obtain a passification of their Troubles and to restore to that Country that Union amongst its Inhabitants which is so necessary for the public good.

After I had received from Mr. Hyde and his Council repeated advices of the preparations Mr. Cary was making to attack them with an armed Force, and the powerfull interest he had made by the means and Artifices of the Quakers to poison the minds of all those who had any remains of a peaceable disposition and to debauch them from their Obedience to a Government to which he himself had consented, and that your President and Council were unable to defend themselves without assistance from this Colony, I did upon mature deliberation with the Council here, judge it most expedient to offer my mediation to accommodate their differences, at least to persuade Mr. Cary to suspend all Acts of Violence untill your Lord'ps should signify your pleasure upon the Laws with which he pretended to be aggrieved. I must do justice to Mr. Hyde and the Gentlemen who act as his Council to represent to Yo'r Lord'ps their readiness to submit all matters in dispute to an impartial examination and to yield to any terms that were just and honourable, but I found a quite different Spirit in Mr. Cary and his Associates, who would not so much as agree to a place of Conference where Mr. Hyde could repair with safety to his person, and at last rejected all offers of Mediation, tho' the Gent. I sent to propose it, signified to him by Mr. Mosely, one of his greatest Confidants, that Mr. Hyde was willing to yield to as many of his demands as he had then thought fit to communicate. The Confidence he placed in his superior Force (having then a Brigantine and Barco longo mounted with canon and filled with armed men riding in Chowan Sound, wearing his Flag at the top-mast head, within gun shott of the places where Mr. Hyde and his Council lay) made him

fancy he should soon be able to reduce Mr. Hyde and the Council under his power, and he had the madness to insinuate to the Gentleman I sent to him that Mr. Hyde might expect the same fate Collo. Park⁸¹ had in Antegoa, but his success has, not hitherto proved answerable to his expectations, having met with Repulse in the attempt that he made to Land and seize Mr. Hyde. However, those who have the direction of him will not suffer him to be discouraged by that disappointment. For Mr. Hyde informs me he is now drawing together a greater Force at Pamlico, and fortifying the house of one Roach, where is the Rendevouze of his Quaker Crew. I think it necessary to acquaint Your Lord'ps that no man has appeared more active in these Commotions than this Roach, a wretched fellow, who being sent in lately with a Cargo of goods belonging to some Merchants in London, no sooner came into the Country but he declared himself against the Government, without examining which side was in the wrong, and has been all [the while] a principal Incendiary, and had it not been for his furnishing the Mobb with trading guns out of his store, and ammunition belonging to his Employers, these Commotions would never have got to the head they are now arrived at. I must not Omitt to inform Your Lord'ps how far the true Spirit of Quakerism has appeared on this Occasion, for besides the insinuations they have made to inflame the Mob, and their Supplying them with arms, rather than baulk their design, several of the Chief of them have accompanied Mr. Cary as his Council, and some even taken upon them military titles. Upon the repeated applications of Mr. Hyde for assistance from hence, I had the unanimous opinion of her Majesty's Council here to send an armed Force for the protection of that Government against this Insurrection, there being now no other way but Force left to restore the peace of Your Lord'ps' Country. I have sent to Mr. Hyde a party of Marines from our Guardships, in hopes that will fright the people from joining in

⁸¹ Colonel Daniel Parke, whose eldest daughter, Frances, married Colonel John Custis, and youngest daughter, Lucy, Colonel Wm. Byrd (the second of the name). Colonel Parke, as an aid-de-camp of the Duke of Marlborough, was with him at the battle of Blenheim, and was selected to convey the news of that memorable victory to Queen Anne. Appointed Governor of the Leeward Islands, he was killed, as intimated in the text, in an insurrection, under the most lawless circumstances.

the mad designs of Cary and his party, when they see their Governor will be supported from hence. The satisfaction Mr. Hyde gave me of your Lord'ps' intention for his being the Governor of that Province, tho' he had met with such disappointment in obtaining his Commission, and the evident proofs that all this Faction against him, is purely occasioned on the account of his acting for the interest of Your Lord'ps, in endeavouring to obtain justice from Mr. Cary in relation to your dues, were very great inducements to engage in this Undertaking. Your Lordships' prudence will easily suggest to you the proper measures to put an end to these Confusions and to establish a more lasting foundation of peace and Tranquility to her Majesty's Subjects under your Government, wherein I shall think myself happy if I can be serviceable, having no private passion or Affection to any person there, nor any other design than to testify the Respect with which I am,

My Lords, &c.

KIQUOTAN, July 31, 1711.

To the Proprietors of Carolina :

MY LORDS:

Since my writing this, the Marines are returned after having frightened the Rebellious party so as to lay down their arms and disperse, and I with joy tell Your Lord'ps that there is now some prospect of tranquility in Yo'r Government, and that I have brought this about without effusion of blood, or disorders committed. And upon my arrival at this place, I found Collo. Cary, Levy, Treuit, &c., blustering and pretending to have taken a passage in the Fleet for their going to England, in order to justify their action. Whereupon I had 'em brought before me, but plainly discovered they intended nothing less than a fair Tryal at Your Lord'ps' Board. Wherefore, seeing they would give me no security for such appearance, I have sent them home in the Reserve and Tyger, Men of War, believing the greatest Justice I can do them is to leave them to Your Lord'ps' Examination.

VIRGINIA, July 28th, 1711.

To Mr. Blathwayt:

SIR:

I have not had the honour of any from you since my last, but having seen a Letter you writt to Collo. Diggs in behalf of Mr. Le Fevre, I very gladly embraced the Opportunity of doing hon'r to your Recommendation by getting the Governor of the College to receive him as Mathematick Professor, with the Sallary of eighty pounds per annum.²³ I thought they could do no less to testify their respect to so good a Benefactor as you have been to that Foundation, and of whose Friendship they will yet have further Occasion in Obtaining her Ma'ty's future Bounty, for perfecting that Work. I have not been undmindfull of what you were pleased to recommend to me at your own house in relation to Mr. Christopher Robinson, who is now appointed Naval Officer of Rappahannock River.

The Accompts of the Revenue will be sent you by Collo. Byrd, by which You will see what bad influence the low price of Tobacco has on both Funds. The whole Ballance of Quitt-rents is now drawn out for the purchase of provisions to be sent to Canada for the use of her Majesty's Forces, so that if any accident should happen in the Country which may require a sudden Ex-pence, We are but in a bad Condition, besides that her Majesty's gracious intentions towards the College will be for some time disappointed by this Extraordinary Draught. You will observe by this year's accompt of the Quitt-rents that there is an increase of above ten thousand acres more than last year, occasioned by the discovery of Concealed Land, for no new grants have been made in that time. I know not whether you have yet had leisure to reflect on the advantages to that Revenue by the Clause in the Act passed here last Session of Assembly (of which I sent you a copy) making three years Non-payment of Quitt-rents a forfeiture of the Estate, but the people here are so sensible how effectual a remedy that will prove to all their Evasions that they begin to

²³This supplies another name in the early faculty of William and Mary College, the published records naming first, as Professor of Mathematics, Rev. Hugh Jones, "172—."

make proposals for buying off the present annual Quitt-rent by any reasonable Composition or fine to be paid for a new grant of their Land on the tenure of paying a small Acknowledgment, but this being a new proposal I shall neither Discourage nor Discountenance it till I have had more time to form a Judgment how far it may be for her Majesty's Service, and shall be glad to be assisted therein with your opinion.

VIRG'A, July 28th, 1711.

To the Com'rs for Sick and Wounded:

GENTLEMEN:

Captain Smith, of her Majesty's Ship the Enterprize, attending this Government, has had the good fortune to take at our Capes a French Privateer of Eighty-eight men, who have been subsisted here from the 7th day of June to the 29th day of this month, at the rate of five pence per day, which I understand is the allowance her Majesty gives in the like Cases. I have taken the opportunity of our Homeward-bound Fleet to send these prisoners to England, Committing it to the care of the Convoy to deliver them on their arrival to your Officers, and hope this method will prove of some advantage to her Majesty's Service by obtaining ye Exchange of so many of her Majesty's Subjects from the Enemy, which I shall always prefer to the particular profit Offered me by sending them with a Flag of Truce to their own Island. Collo. Blakiston, who is Agent for this Colony, will wait on you with the Accompt of the whole expence of their Subsistence here, and observe your orders in receiving the money, and I hope you will be pleased to direct the payment of it as soon as may be, for the greater encouragement of others Chearfully to advance their money for the Queen's Service on the like occasions.

July 28th, 1711.

*To Mr. Warr:*⁸⁵

SIR:

I am to acknowledge the favour of your kind Letter of the 9th December, which I received the 29th of May, I heartily wish you joy of the post you so deservedly fill, and have a particular pleasure to find that the advices I am to receive from or send to My Lord Sec'y are to pass through the hands of a person of your Character. I must intreat your giving dispatch to any of the Affairs of this Government that come before you, Assuring you I shall always retain a just sense of your favour, and am with great truth.

VIRGINIA, July 28th, 1711.

To My Lord Dartmouth:

MY LORD:

Having given Your Lord'p the trouble of two dispatches by the New York packet boat (of which the duplicates are inclosed) I have little now to add, except to enclose the Journals of Council and proclamations which contain the publick transactions of this her Majesty's Colony. Since the arrival of the Marines I sent into Carolina, The Affairs of that Country seem to take a new turn. Mr. Cary and his party are dispersed, and 'tis hoped the Courts of Justice and Assembly of the Province will again be at Liberty to resume their Functions. Upon advice that some of the Chief of Mr. Cary's Faction were come into this Colony, the Council advised the issuing a proclamation for apprehending them 'till they should give Security for their good behaviour here, for no government can be safe that has in it such dangerous Incendiaries. There are several Affidavits sent me to prove that

⁸⁵ ——— Warre, appointed the Secretary in 1691, of Lord Nottingham, Principal Secretary of State.

one Porter who is one of Mr. Cary's pretended Council was with the Tuscaruro Indians promising great Rewards to incite them to cut off all the Inhabitants of that part of Carolina that adhered to Mr. Hyde. The Indians own that the proposal was accepted by their young men, but that their old men (who bare great Sway in all their Councils) being of their own nature Suspicious of some trick or else directed by a Superior providence, refused to be concerned in that barbarous design. I must beg leave to represent to Your Lord'ps how ill provided we are here to oppose either a foreign Enemy or Intestine Commotions, the powder her Majesty sent hither some years ago is so much wasted by lying so long in this Climate that there's no dependence on its doing execution even at half distance. I pray Your Lord'ps will be pleased to move her Majesty to send a fresh Supply, and in the Meantime that the Captains of her Majesty's Ships of War resorting to this place may be directed to exchange from time to time some new powder for that here, which will be as usefull as any other for their Signals, Watch guns or Salutes. Her Majesty's Ship the Enterprize attending this Government had the good fortune to take at our Capes a French privateer of 88 men from Petitguarms [sic] which had used their Coast and done great damage to our Trade for two or three summer's past. I have sent the prisoners home by this Fleet and hope it may prove for her Majesty's Service in redeeming from the Enemy the like number of her Majesty's Subjects, which I shall always preferr to the particular Advantages to me by sending them in a Flag of Truce to their own Island.

KIQUOTAN IN VIRGINIA, July 31, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth :

MY LORD :

Since my Letter of the 28th Current, I received information that Collo. Cary and some of the principal Ring-leaders in the late disturbances in Carolina were come to this place. Whereupon, not judging it consistent with the peace of

this Government to suffer such Incendiarys to remain here, I thought fitt to examine them touching their intentions in coming into this Government, they alleged that they came hither to get a passage for England, that they might justify themselves before the Lords proprietors for what they had done, but withall refused to give any Security to answer there. And finding so much Shuffling and Evasion in all other discourse, as plainly shewed they intended nothing less than to stand a Tryal, I have thought fitt to send them home by the men of War of this Convoy, that they may be made accountable for their actions either before the Lords Proprietors of Carolina, or in such other manner as her Majesty shall think fitt. I have directed the Comodore, upon his arrival in England, to give Yo'r Lord'ps immediate notice and wait your directions for the disposal of the Prisoners, and I must humbly offer my opinion that if measures are not taken to discourage such Mutinous Spirits, especially when they become audacious as to take up arms and even to Confederate with Savages, it may prove a dangerous example to the rest of her Majesty's plantations.

VIRGINIA, July 30th, 1711.

*To the Earl of Rochester.*⁸⁴

MY LORD:

The extraordinary Scituation of affairs in my Neighbourhood gives Occasion to the doing myself the honour of this Letter wherein I shall be cautious of taking up Your Lord'p's time with any needless detail of the distractions in North Carolina, well knowing there are persons now gone over to make a full Representation thereof, and that if the particulars be judged material, they will be communicated to Your Lord'p by her Majesty's Secretary of State, and by ye Council of Trade, to whom I have writt at large upon this head, and shall only in general say, that when I found a Mob up in arms

⁸⁴Lawrence Hyde, Earl of Rochester, (maternal Uncle of the Queen,) who had been recently appointed President of the Council. He died in 1712.

obstructing the course of Justice, demanding the dissolution of the Assembly, and the Repeal of all Laws they disliked, rejecting the Mediation of this Government, and Slighting the Concessions made by their President and Council for redressing all the Grievances they thought fitt to communicate, when they declared their intentions to act another Antigoa Tragedy, and not only threatened to call in Indians to their Alliance, but actually Endeavoured to engage the Tuscaruros in a barbarous design of cutting off all her Majesty's Subjects that were not of their party, I thought it high time to interpose with a Force from this Colony to put a more effectual stop to their madness, which I rejoice to tell Your Lord'p is now hapily accomplished, and that party dispersed without effusion of blood. Here I beg leave to offer it as my humble opinion, That since the Country of North Carolina has long been the common Sanctuary of all our Runaway Servants and of all others that fly from the due execution of the Laws in this and her Majesty's other plantations. Since they labor under such a total Absence of Religion that there is but one Clergyman in the whole Country, who has been little more than a year there, and has since baptized great numbers of persons of all ages. [Since the Quakers are a numerous people there, and have been fatally trusted with a large share in the administration of that Government, and often taken up arms to maintain themselves therein; Since it has been the common practice there to resist and imprison their Governors, as that they look upon that as lawfull which has been so long tolerated, but lately since neither the great Moderation and (I may justly say) prudent behaviour of Mr. Hyde, nor the respect due to his birth and Character, could avail anything on that mutinous people, I cannot see how it is possible to reduce that Anarchy into a regular form of Government, without their Governor be invested with a greater Authority than the Lords Proprietors can confer, and that he be also assisted and Supported from this Government, which I can joyfully assure your Lord'p is in perfect peace and Tranquility, under a due Obedience to the Royal Authority and a Gen'll Conformity to the established Church of England.] And to this, that if the person appointed Deputy Governor of North Carolina be Commissioned by the Crown, her Majesty will have at hand one to take Care of this Government upon any sudden Vacancy; Since the interest of Great Brittain and the Royal

prerogative cannot but lose ground during the rule of a President who is generally either a native of the place, or too considerably interested therein. I pray Yo'r Lord'p to interpret the trouble I have here given you, as proceeding from a sincere desire to promote her Majesty's service, together with the Welfare of her people, and to advance the interest of my Native Country and the established Church, which will always be the hearty endeavours of him who begs the honour of subscribing himself, with the profoundest Respect,

My Lord,
Your Lord'p's
Most dutifull &
Most devoted
Humble Servant.

VIRGINIA, September ye 5th, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth :

MY LORD :

I have had the hon'r to receive yo'r Lord'p's of the 14th of April with her Majesty's Order in Council permitting the General Assembly of this Colony to pass into a Law that Article of my Instruction for regulating the method of granting Lands. That order seems by its date to have been made before the Acts of the late Assembly came to yo'r Lord'p's hands. The measure I have already taken in making all patents for Land conformable to her Majesty's Instructions as to the terms of Cultivation and Seating, together with the clauses I got inserted in an act passed last Session of Assembly, which making the Non Compliance with the Conditions of the patent a forfeiture of the Land, will, I hope, answer her Majesty's intentions without putting the Assembly to the Tryal of passing that into a Law against which the Country has shewed a general dislike. I shall not give your Lord'p the trouble of enlarging further on this subject, having writt fully by this Conveyance to the Lords Comm'rs for Trade, from whom I hope to receive further directions, if after what I have represented the Enacting of this Instruction be thought necessary.

VIRGINIA, Sept. 5th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

On the 3d instant I received by the way of New York the hon'r of your Lord'ps' of the 12th of March and 13th of April last, with her Majesty's Orders in Council therein referred to, and by the same Conveyance I'm informed by a Letter from your Lord'ps' Secretary that my Letters which accompanied the proceedings of the Gen'll Assembly are safely come to y'r Lord'ps' hands. Immediately upon the receipt of her Majesty's Commands concerning the boundarys I dispatched an Express to Mr. Hyde, whom we look upon here to be Governor of North Carolina, desiring him to let me know whether he had received authority from the Lords Proprietors to appoint new Commissioners, that I might, pursuant to her Majesty's pleasure, appoint the time and place of their meeting, and shall, upon the return of his answer, take all possible care for Expediting this Affair. I shall, according to her Majesty's commands, publish the Repeal of the Law passed in 1666 Entitled An Act declaring what is meant by seating of Land; but I hope y'r Lord'ps will be fully satisfied by perusing the Act for settling the Titles and bounds of Lands, passed last Session of Assembly, and what I have formerly writt on that subject, that there is no Occasion for publishing her Majesty's order in Council of the 17th of April, 1707, Of w'ch y'r Lord'ps have been pleased now to send me a Duplicate. Y'r Lord'ps will observe by some of my former Letters how much the Country disliked the Instruction for regulating the taking up of Land, insomuch that it was the Chief grievance with which they charged their Representatives to the last Assembly. That in pursuance of this Charge the House of Burgesses made early application to me for granting patents of land upon the former Terms, and that by my answer to their Address, and some other means, I had the good fortune to stave off a Representation w'ch they intended to make to her Majesty on that subject, by all w'ch Y'r Lord'ps will find how little hopes there are that the Assembly will pass the 84th Article of my Instructions into a Law, as is proposed by Her Majesty's Order in Council of the 24th of

March. The condition of Cultivating and improving mentioned in that Instruction has been, and is still, thought so hard and impracticable that y'r Lord'ps may remember what pressing applications the President and Council formerly made for obtaining an Alteration of it. Yet, notwithstanding the general prejudice against this Instruction, I thought myself so far obliged to support it that I would not suffer the last Assembly, in their Law concerning Land, to mention anything of the manner of granting, or terms of seating any, otherwise than to oblige the patentee to comply with the Condition of his patent on ye penalty of forfeiture of his Land and, having afterwards made the patents Conformable to her Majesty's Instructions as to the conditions of Cultivating and improving. I am humbly of Opinion that her Ma'ty's s'd Instruction, being ye Rule for the Governor's granting of Land, and the late Law making it so Penal for the patentee if he does not comply with the condition of his Grant, her Majesty's intentions are as fully answered as if that Instruction were passed into a Law in terminis, which can never be expected from an Assembly. For the necessity of passing in the last Assembly a Law to settle the titles of Land between party and party for avoiding that Confusion w'ch must have been introduced in all the Courts of justice upon the Repeal of the former, made them the more easily yield to ye Clause I proposed. Yet the people are now so much convinced that all ye fraudulent practices formerly used to avoid ye payment of their Quitt-rents are by this means obviated, that they would gladly lay hold of any handle to new model that Law; and I very much fear the proposing to them the Enacting her Ma'ty's Instructions into a Law would rather give them occasion not only to complain ag't it, but even to endeavour a Repeal of ye Law now in Force, w'ch is look'd upon as one that contains a Clause or two the most beneficial to ye Crown that ever passed a Virg'a Assembly. And as I must say 'twas not without a good deal of Address that I obtained them, So I'm sure I yielded none either in this Law or any other that I pass'd w'ch I imagined could be any ways prejudicial to the Crown or to Great Brittain, as indeed the Virginians already do me the hon'r to Characterize me for a person who will take care that neither of those Interests shall lose ground where I command; while on the other hand, they do not Stick to tax their Burgesses with

being either asleep or guilty of too great Complaisance when they passed a Law w^{ch} abridges them of their former privileges. So that, upon the whole matter, I hope y^r Lord^{ps} will be pleased to believe I act for her Ma^{ty}'s service if I forbear to lay her Majesty's Order in Council before the Assembly untill I receive y^r Ld^{ps}' further opinion upon what I have represented, tho' I'm afraid it cannot be one so speedily dispatched as to reach hither before the next Session, which is to meet the 7th of September. Notwithstanding her Majesty's positive Orders notified to the Lords Proprietors and Government of South Carolina to permitt the Traders of Virginia freely to pass through that Province to trade with the Western Indians, That Government have in June last thought fitt to pass an Act in contradiction to her Majesty's Order, and thereby imposed on the Virginia traders All the hardship her Ma^{ty} intended graciously to remedy, by her Order in Council; and having obtained from Collo. Quarry, now lately returned from Carolina, a copy of that Act, I have here inclosed it, not doubting y^r Lord^{ps} will thereupon make such a Representation to her Majesty as may free the Inhabitants of this Colony from the like future Impositions.

VIRGINIA, September 5th, 1711.

To the Comm^{rs} of the Customs:

GENITEMEN:

Since I had the honour to write to you last, Collo. Quarry has called here in his return from South Carolina, and has informed me that the Memorial I laid before Y^r Hon^{rs}, concerning your Collectors, was referred for his Opinion, upon which I have now taken occasion to discourse him at large, and the Result of our Joint Consultations Yo^r Hon^{rs} will find in the inclosed proposals. Collo. Quarry is fully persuaded that a Searcher, established according to what we have here proposed, will be of far greater service than 20 Collectors; and as to the person recommended to Yo^r Hon^{rs} for that employment, We are both well satisfied of his Capacity and diligence, and that as

he will spare no pains in his own person to further this Service, So he is of sufficient ability to go through with it, if the Sallary proposed should not prove answerable to the trouble, but I intend him some additional Advantages in the place of his Residence, which I hope will encourage his diligence in this employment. Yo'r Hon'rs will observe that We have been carefull not to enhance the charge of this new establishment, being willing Y'r Hon'rs shall make an Experiment of the unfulness of this new Office in York and James River, before another be established for the rest of the Bay. It has been the Custom here ever since the Act of the 7th and 8th of King William enjoined the Registering of Ships, for the Auditor or Receiver Gen'll of her Maj'ty's Revenues to sign with the Governor to those Registers, but as I shall not be desirous to continue any Custom not warranted by the Acts of parliament, I must pray your Hon'rs, opinion whether the former practice ought to be continued, or if the Registers ought to be signed by one of your Collectors, and what Fee may reasonably be demanded for that Service. The power Y'r Hon'rs have been pleased to give to the Governors of the College for app'ting Comptrollers of the penny a pound, is certainly the greatest service that could be done to that Foundation. And Y'r Hon'rs will believe it was high time to put it in practice when Mr. Luke, the Collector of the Lower district of James River, has within these last twelve months received above £200 of that duty, and could not pay one farthing when the College Receiver demanded it in Collo. Quarry's presence, besides a considerable Arrier in his former accounts, which they are never like to receive, unless Y'r Hon'rs will be pleased to oblige the persons bound for him at Y'r Board to make Satisfaction. Collo. Quarry would long ere now have suspended him, had it not been that Such a Suspension must have deprived him of his Sallary, and consequently of the best means to Clear his debts, and do justice to his Creditors. But now that pursuant to Y'r Hon'rs' permission there is a Comptroller appointed over him, it seems much more advisable to let him enjoy his place and Sallary till your Hon'rs think fitt to remove him by the Regulation proposed, and that in the meantime his Sallary be applyed towards the satisfaction of the College, so far as it will extend. There has lately been seized by Capt. Garlington, commanding one of our Guardships, a small shallop

bound for Boston with 12 hogsheads of Tobacco, taken in after clearing, for w^{ch} no bond was given nor duty paid. Upon w^{ch} the Vessell and Cargo are condemned and appraised to thirty odd pounds. The Captor is a Gentleman who during his being on this Station has shewed himself a very Diligent Officer, and on that acc^t I gave him for his encouragement my share of the forfeiture, and finding that after deduction of the Fees and Charges of Condemnation the Queen's share fell under the sum of £10, I did, conformable to a power granted me by her Majesty's Instructions (for disposing of all forfeitures under that value) give him her Majesty's share too, and hope my bestowing such a trifle upon an officer who deserves well, will not be disapproved, especially since it has been always the practice here to apply the Queen's share of such forfeitures for the support of this Government. I am, &c.

Proposals humbly offered to the hon^{ble} Commissioners
of her Majesty's Customs for the better preventing
illegal Trade in the Colony of Virginia :

Out of a sincere desire that her Majesty's Customs may be under such Regulations as may tend most to the Service of the Crown, We the Subscribers, after mature consideration, do humbly offer That instead of the three Collectors now established for York and James Rivers, there be one appointed for both Rivers, to reside at Williamsburgh, with the Sallary of £100 ^{per} annum for himself and a Clerk, and that Major William Buckner be put in that Office. That a Searcher be appointed with a Sallary of £100 ^{per} annum for himself and for keeping constantly a Shallop well fitted with Sails and Oars and 4 able hands at least, to Cruise in the Bay for detecting illegal Traders, and examining all Vessells before they sail out of the Capes. That a further Allowance of £50 be given him for building a house on Point Comfort for the use of himself and Successors (as being the most proper Station for discovering all Vessells going out of James River and York or coming down the Bay) and that the said house be appropriated to the use of the Searcher for the time being. And it is proposed that Mr. Nicholas Curle be appointed for that Office.

That if the Commissioners of the Customs think fitt to continue Mr. Luke to be an Officer, he be put into the Collector's place of South Potomac, now vacant, since he is in no ways proper for so considerable a trust as that at Williamsburgh. But if the Comm'rs judge it convenient to lay Mr. Luke aside, then Capt. Daniel McCarty⁸⁶ is humbly recommended for Potomack River. That some means be found out for an allowance of 40 or 50 lb per annum to Collo. William Waters, Naval Officer of the Eastern Shore, for his Encouragement to continue in that Office, and to enable him to keep a boat and hands to search the plantation Vessells trading in that District, for which Service he lives very commodiously, but the profites of his place of Naval Officer is so far from bearing any proportion to the trouble he must undergo in a Service of this nature, that it will scarce defray the charge of Crossing the bay to pass the accounts.

That the Commissioners of the Customs will be pleased to signify their opinion which is the proper officer for signing with the Governor, the Registers of Ships and Vessells pursuant to the 7th and 8th of King William, and what Fee may reasonably be demanded for the said Registers. All which is humbly submitted to the better Judgment of the hon'ble Commissioners of her Majesty's Customs by —

VIRGINIA, October 15th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

After what I writt to Y'r Lord'ps, the 28th of July last, of the Success of my endeavours for quieting the Com-motions in Carolina, I was in hopes I should not have had Occasion to trouble Y'r Lord'ps again with the Affairs of that Country, But a more dismal and unexpected accident happened there lately. I think it my duty to give Your Lord'ps the following account of it, together with my proceedings thereupon :

⁸⁶ Daniel McCarty represented Westmoreland County in 1718, in the House of Burgesses, and was Speaker of that body.

On the 22nd⁸⁶ of the last month some towns of the Tuscaruro Indians and other Nations bordering on Carolina, made an incursion upon the head of Neuse and Pamlico Rivers, in that province, without any previous declaration of War or show of discontent, and having divided themselves into partys at Sun rise (which was the Signal for their bloody design) began a barbarous Massacre, on the Inhabitants of the Frontier plantations, killing without distinction of age or Sex, 60 English and upwards of that number of Swiss and palatines,⁸⁷ besides a great many left dangerously wounded. The Baron de Graffenried,⁸⁸ Chief of the Swiss and Palatines' Settlement there, is also fallen into their hands and carried away Prisoner. Since which they have continued their Ravages in burning those plantations, and others deserted by the Inhabitants for fear of the like Crueltys. The Governor, Mr. Hyde, has raised what men he can to oppose the further Invasion of the heathen and protect the rest of the Country, but that Spirit of disobedience to which they have long been accustomed, still prevails so much that he can hardly persuade them to unite for their common Safety. I will not affirm that the invitation given those Savages some time ago by Collo. Cary and his party to cutt off their fellow Subjects, has been the only occasion of this Tragedy, tho' that heavy charge is proved

⁸⁶ Wheeler gives the date as Sept. 11th, and the number of slain as 112. *History of North Carolina*, p. 37. Ramsay, however, puts the number as 137. *Annals of Tennessee*, p. 44.

⁸⁷ Among the victims was John Lawson, surveyor general and historian of Carolina, a native of Scotland, who was burned at the stake. His work—"A New Voyage to Carolina, containing the Exact Description and Natural History of that Country," &c., was published at London 1709, 4to, and at Raleigh, 12mo., 1860.

⁸⁸ The Lord Proprietors granted in 1709, to Christopher, Baron de Graffenriedt, 10,000 acres of land, on the Neuse and Cape Fear rivers, at the rate of £10 sterling for every thousand acres, and five shillings quit-rent. A great number of Palatines and fifteen hundred Swiss followed the Baron and settled at the confluence of the Trent and the Neuse. The town was called New Bern, after Bern in Switzerland, the birth-place of De Graffenriedt. The massacre so disheartened him that he sold his landed interest to Thomas Pollock for £800, and removed to Virginia, where his descendants are represented at the present day in many highly esteemed family names. In the *Virginia Gazette* of October 21, 1739, a Mrs. De Graffenriedt announces an entertainment to be given at her house in Williamsburg.

by divers Testimonys and firmly believed in Carolina. Yet it appears very reasonable to believe that they have been greatly encouraged in this attempt by the unnatural Divisions and Animosities among the Inhabitants, and I very much fear their mutinous and Cowardly behaviour in some late Skirmishes will Embolden the Indians to continue their Insolences.

Upon the first Advice of this unhappy Event, I sent out Detachments of our Militias to prevent Our Tributary Indians joining with those Savages, and understanding that the greater part of the Tuscaruros had refused to be concerned with the rest of the Nation in this bloody Execution, I have sent to them and the other Neighbouring Indians to meet me next Week on our frontiers, in order to a Treaty. And as they stand in Awe of this Government, both from the opinion they have of our Strength and their apprehensions of the loss of our Trade upon a Rupture, I hope at this Conference to work so far on their Fears and interest as at least to preserve their Friendship, if not to engage their Assistance for the destruction of those Assassins; there is very little temptation for any man to enter upon an Indian War, nor much honor to be got by encountering people more like Wild Beasts than men; but if War be the only means left us to secure her Majesty's people and Territorys from the heathen, I don't doubt but our Assembly, which is to meet the 7th of the next month, will take such Resolutions as become them to provide for the effectual prosecution of it; but whatever Air I may put upon the matter with the Indians, I must not conceal from Your Lord'ps the incapacity of this Country for an Offensive or Defensive War. Our Militia are in a manner wholly destitute of Ammunition, and are as ill provided with arms that are usefull, and unless her Majesty will be pleased to send me a Supply of both, to ly ready against an Emergency, I fear I shall not be able to sustain any considerable attack of an Enemy. As soon as I was informed of this fatal accident in Carolina, I prohibited all trading from this Country with the Indians, finding they were better provided with Ammunition than We our selves, and had the Government of Carolina made the Same Stop when this Country had a dispute with those very Indians about a murder Comitted here four years ago, It is very probable they might have been more cautious of falling upon any of her Majesty's plantations when they found we espoused

one another's quarrells; but the tameness of this Government in passing over that Affair, and the Constant Supplys they received from Carolina of Powder, shott and other necessarys, notwithstanding the representations of this Government, made them believe we were under Distinct Sovereigns, as well as Governors, and that we would no more assist Carolina than they us. I have also sent [to] demand the Releasement of the Baron de Graffenreid, who by our last Advices was still alive, but supposed only reserved for a more Solemn Execution, to be Tomahawk'd and tortured at their first Publick War Dance.

VIRGINIA, October 15th, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth:

MY LORD:

In my letters of the 28th and 31st of July last I gave Y'r Lord'ps an account of my proceedings in quieting the Commotions in North Carolina, which were happily terminated by the removal of the head of that factious party, Collo. Cary, whom I sent away prisoner in the Convoy to our last fleet; but I am now to inform Y'r Lord'p of a more tragical Accident that hath lately happened there, and seems to be a Consequence of their former Dissentions. On the 22th of the last month, several towns of the Tuscaruro and other Indians bordering on Carolina made an incursion upon the head of Neuse and Pamlico Rivers, in that province, and, having posted men at the several frontier plantations, began just at Sunrise a most bloody and barbarous Massacre in both those places, miserably butchering all that fell into their hands without Distinction of age or Sex; about 60 of the English and upwards of that number of the Swiss and Palatines perished in this bloody execution, and a great many more are wounded. Since which they have continued their Ravages in burning and destroying the plantations of the murdered persons, and others that had deserted theirs for fear of the like Crueltys. The Baron of Graffenreid, Chief of the Swiss and Palatines' Settlement there, is also fallen into their hands and carried away prisoner. I will not affirm that which will be

a heavy Charge against Collo. Cary, that the Invitation his party gave the Indians to cutt off their fellow Subjects has been the occasion of this bloody Massacre, tho' that charge is proved by good Testimonys and firmly believed in Carolina; but I am very certain the Indians would never have attacked them if their own divisions had not given too great encouragement. Mr. Hyde, the Governor of that province, has raised what men he could to defend the rest of the Country, and to suppress these Savages, but the people have been so long accustomed to disobedience to Government that they are not to be brought under any discipline or Rule, and I very much fear their mutinous behaviour among themselves and Cowardice in some Skirmishes they have had with the Indians will embolden the latter to further insolence. Upon the first Advice of this fatal Accident I sent out detachments of our Militia to our Tributary Indians to hinder them joining with the other Savages, And understanding that several of the Tuscaruro towns refused to be concerned with the other Indians in this War, I have sent to them and all the other Neighbouring Indians, to meet me the next week at a place I have appointed on our Frontiers in order to come to some Treaty. And as those Indians stand in some awe of this Government, both from the imagination of our strength and from the consideration of the Straits they would be putt to by the Loss of our Trade, I expect at this Conference to work so far on their Fears and Interests, that I may at least preserve their friendship, if not engage their Asssistance in the destruction of those Assassins. And if War be the only means left us to secure her Majesty's people and Territory from the Heathen, I do not doubt but our Assembly (which is to meet the 7th of next month) will Come to such resolutions as become them to provide for the prosecuting it effectually. There is very little temptation for any man to enter into War with people more like wild beasts than men, and whatsoever air I may give the matter with them yet I need not conceal from yo'r Lord'ps that this Country is in a very indifferent Capacity for an Offensive or defensive War, having neither arms that are usefull nor any reasonable quantity of ammunition, and unless her Majesty will be pleased to send in a supply of both to ly ready against an emergency, I fear I shall not be able to sustain any considerable attack of an Enemy.

[Upon the apprehensions We had this summer of a French Squadron (which is said to be now in the West Indies) I made a Shift to raise four Forts and raise some Lines for the defence of our Chief Rivers, and to mount about 70 pieces of Canon, not finding at my arrival such a thing as either Parapet, Pallisade or one single piece of ordnance mounted throughout the whole Government. I endeavoured to make our last Assembly sensible of the naked Condition of their Country, but the expence appearing to them much more immediate than the danger, they were Easily influenced by their Low Circumstances to defer the condition thereof; however I prevailed on them to revive in the meanwhile a former Law made for the defence of the Country in times of danger, and by virtue of that Law, I have carried on the above-mentioned Works during the late Alarm, Notwithstanding [I have been mightily Embarrassed by a sett of Quakers who broach Doctrines so monstrous as their Brethren in England have never owned, nor, indeed, can be suffered in any Government. They have not only refused to work themselves, or suffer any of their Servants to be employed in the Fortifications, but affirm that their Consciences will not permit them to contribute in any manner of way to the defence of the Country even so much as trusting the Government with provisions to support those that do work, tho' at the same time they say that being obliged by their Religion to feed the Enemys, if the French should come hither and want provisions, they must, in conscience, Supply them.] As this Opinion of theirs is quite different from their practice in Carolina, where they were the most active in taking arms to pull down the Government, tho' they now fly again to the pretence of Conscience to be excused from assisting against the Indians, I have thought it necessary to put the Laws of this Country in execution against that Sect of people, which impowred me to employ all persons as I shall see fitt for the defence of the Country in times of danger, and impose fines and penalty's upon their disobedience. I doubt not they will sufficiently exclaim against me on this Occasion, and perhaps their Brethren in England, who keep a joint Stock to preserve the quarrells of all the Sect [who] may think fitt to attack me, but I'm persuaded I shall not incurr my Sovereign's displeasure so long as I act by the Rule of Law, and it is absolutely necessary to discourage such dangerous Opinions as would render the safety of

the Government precarious. Since every one that is either lazy or Cowardly would make use of the pretence of Conscience to excuse himself from working or fighting when there is greatest need of his service, and I fear the Quakers would find too many proselytes on such Occasions.]

VIRGINIA, Nov. 17th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

The last letter I had the hon'r to write to y'r Lord'ps, of which the inclosed is a copy, gave an account of my intended progress to our Southern Frontiers to meet the Deputys of the Tuscaruro Indians. Accordingly, having drawn together to Nottowaytown against the time appointed the Militia of the three Neighbouring Countys, consisting of upwards of 600 men, five of the Great men of that Nation arrived very opportunely, just at the time I had brought the Militia under some discipline, and were not a little surprized to find there a great body of men in such good order. After entering into Conference with them, I found both by their discourse and also from what my Messenger assured me of his observation while he was in their towns, that they were very desirous to continue in peace with this Government, and seemed much concerned that any of their Nation should have joined in the Massacre in Carolina. I then proposed to them either to carry a War against those Indians upon the promise of Rewards to be paid them, or to joine with her Ma'ty's Subjects of Carolina for extirpating those Assassines, and that for the better assuring us of their future good behaviour, they should deliver two Children of the great men of each town to remain as Hostages, and to be educated at our College. But as they had no authority to conclude anything without the concurrence of the rest of their Nation, they desired time to informe their Towns, and promised to return with an answer by the 20th of this month, and I'm in great hopes to obtain what I have proposed by the readiness they have already showed in this meeting as well as their frankness in procuring the Liberty

of the Baron de Graffenreid upon the demand I made of him, who was to be conducted home to Carolina the next day after my Messenger left their Country. The delivering their Children as Hostages will not only prove the most effectually Security for their fidelity, but may be a good step towards the Conversion of that whole Nation to the Christian faith, and I could not hope for a more favorable Conjunction to make this demand than now, when they are under great apprehensions of our Resentment for the late barbarities committed in Carolina, and the impressions made on them by the appearance of so great a force as I then showed them. I took this occasion to renew a proposal I had formerly made to our Tributary Indians for sending some of their Children to be brought up at the College, and tho' it has hitherto been judged a matter so impracticable that the Governors of the College have thought it in vain to attempt it, and have chosen rather to be at a great expence for buying Indians of remote nations taken in war to be educated in pursuance of a donation left for that purpose by Mr. Boyle, yet I have prevailed so far by offering to remitt their whole Tribute of Skins as long as they kept their Children at the College, that the King of the Nansemonds has already sent his son and Cousin, the Nottoways and Meherrins have sent each two of their Chief men's Sons to be brought up to Learning and Christianity, and the Queen of Pamunkey, upon seeing how well these Indian Children are treated, has engaged to send her son and the Son of one of the Chief men upon the same foot, and I also expect another boy from the Chickahominys. As the remitting their tributes is one of the Conditions for keeping their Children at the College, and I believe a strong motive to engage their compliance; so, if it should happen to be disapproved and revoked by succeeding Governors, because it lessens their income, it may occasion their recalling their Children, and consequently prove a discouragement to the design of their Conversion. And therefore I humbly offer to your Lord'ps' consideration that her Majesty may be moved to signify her approbation of my yielding this branch of the Governor's perquisites, and if that be thought too great a prejudice to my Successors, I shall, if your Lord'ps think fitt, prepare another Fund by w^{ch} her Majesty may be enabled to give an equivalent for this Loss, which I shall beg leave in that case to lay before your Lord'ps.

I hope ye Example I have sett, with what I have recommended in my speech to ye Assembly [on] ye Subject will prompt them to settle some ffund towards ye education of ye Indians, since that already given ye College by Mr. Boyle⁸⁰ is too small for ye main-tainance of so great a number as are like to be there in a short time. And that y'r Lord'ps may be informed of ye affairs under the consideration of this Assembly, I take ye liberty to inclose a Copy of my Speech at ye opening this Session, and shall by ye next Opportunity, w'ch I expect in a short time, give Yo'r Lord'ps an acc't of their proceedings, together with ye progress of my negotiations w'th the Tuscaruro Indians, w'ch I am obliged now to break off by reason of the sudden departure of the Ship by w'ch this is returned.

VIRGINIA, November 11th, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth:

MY LORD:

Since my last of the 15th of October (of which a Duplicate is enclosed) wherein I gave Y'r Lord'p an account of my intended progress to meet and treat with the Tuscaruro Indians for securing the peace of this Colony and punishing the Indians concerned in the late barbarous Massacre in Carolina, my Messenger is returned, and brought with him 5 of the Chief men of that Nation as Deputys from the rest, who came very opportunely just as I had brought into some discipline the body of Militia which I had drawn together at Nottowaytown, on that occasion from the 3 Neighbouring Countys, consisting of upwards of 1,600 men. So great an appearance of armed men and in such good order, very much surprized them, and gave them a more advantageous Opinion of the strength of this Government than they had before conceived. Whereupon I thought it necessary to improve that opportunity to the best advantage, and imedi-

⁸⁰ Robert Boyle, the eminent natural philosopher. He was the seventh son of the first Earl of Cork, and brother of Lord Broghill. He was born at Lismore, Ireland, in 1627, and died December 30, 1691. His legacy to the college was £200.

ately let them know what I expected of their Nation in order to preserve our Friendship, which was either to carry on a war by themselves against those Assassins, upon promise of reward for so doing, or to joine with her Majesty's Subjects of Carolina for extirpating them, and that we might be the better assured of their fidelity hereafter, I also proposed that two of the Chief men's sons of each of their Towns should be delivered to this Government as Hostages and to be educated at our College. I found by the discourse I had with the Deputys of the Tuscaruros as well as the Report of my Messenger of his Observations while in their Towns, the desire they had to continue in peace with this Government and their concern that any of their Nation should have been engaged in the late Massacre in Carolina, that they were under a sufficient dread of our Resentment on that account, and that these Deputys were well enough inclined for their own part to agree to any proposals but that they had not authority to conclude anything without communication with their respective towns, to which intent they desired a month's time for consultation, and I expect their final answer by the 20th of this month, at which time our Assembly will be sitting, so that if they fail to comply, some other Resolutions may then be taken, but their readiness to procure the Liberty of the Baron de Graffenried upon my message (who was to be conducted home the next day after my messenger left their town) seems to be a certain testimony of their good disposition to peace. The obtaining some of their Children to be educated at our College will not only be the surest means to keep them in friendship with her Majesty's Subjects, but may (I hope) prove a good step towards the Conversion of that whole Nation, which is the most consid'ble in these parts, and I have taken pains to make them comprehend so fully the advantages their Children will reap by the education amongst us, that I have great hopes of their Compliance even in this point, tho' the engaging of our own Tributary Indians to allow of any of their Children to be educated at the College upon the foundation established for that purpose by the deceased Mr. Boyle, has been hitherto thought a matter of that difficulty that the Governors of the College have rather chosen to buy at a great expense, Children of remote Nations, taken in war, than to attempt what they thought in vain. Yet I have so much at heart the Conversion of those heathen,

and believe it so agreeable to her Maj'ty's pious intentions, that I used my utmost endeavours for accomplishing this Design, and knowing that nothing could more effectually induce that people to a Compliance than the consideration of their interest, I did some time ago offer the remitting their annual Tribute of Skins so long as they permitted their Children to be brought up at the College; they were indeed a little shy of yielding to this proposal, and urged the breach of a former Compact made long ago by this Government, when instead of their Children receiving the promised education they were transported (as they say) to other Countrys and sold as Slaves, but I have had the good fortune to remove any such Jealousie and have convinced them by my freely parting with my own dues that there is no such intention now. Whereupon the King of the Nansemonds has sent his son and Cousin, and the Nottoways and Meherrins have sent each two of their Chief men's Sons to the College, and consented that they shall be brought up in the Christian faith. I have taken care for their encouragement to have them well Cloathed and kindly treated, and the Queen of Pamunkey, upon seeing their good usage, has likewise promised that her son and one of the sons of the Chief man of that Nation shall be speedily sent, and I expect one from the Chickahominys; as their remitting their Tribute is one of the Conditions for their keeping their Children at the College, so that if that should be revoked by succeeding Governors because it lessens their income, it may stir up the Indians to recall their Children, and therefore I beg leave to offer it to your Lord'p's consideration to move her Majesty for her Royal approbation of my yielding this branch of the Governor's perquisites upon so good an account. But if this should be judged too great a prejudice to my successors, I don't doubt but to find a proper ffund out of which her Majesty may be enabled to give an equivalent for this Loss. I hope the Example I have sett, with what I have recommended to our Majesty on that Subject will prompt them to settle some ffund for the education of Indians, since that already established by the deceased Mr. Boyle will be too small for the maintainance of so great a number as are like to be at the College in a short time. If your Lord'p is desirous upon what affairs our Assembly is chiefly convened, I have sent a copy of my speech to the Lords Comm'rs for Trade, where I doubt not your Lord'p will have a

view of it. I shall by the next Opportunity (which I expect speedily) give Your Lord^p a particular account of their proceedings, together with the progress.

VIRGINIA, November 11th, 1711.

To the Bishop of London.

MY LORD:

The little care that has hither been taken for converting the Indians of this Country to the Christian faith, or so much as endeavouring in any manner to Civilize them, seems to be no small reproach both to our Religion and politicks after above one whole Century, that the English Government hath been established here. They who would excuse this neglect, urge that the small number of our Neighbouring Indians, who are still declining, makes it not worth while to take any pains with them, and likewise that they are of so suspicious a Nature that they could never be persuaded to let their Children stay any time among the Inhabitants to attain a tolerable knowledge of our language without which they are incapable of receiving Instruction in the principles of Christianity, but as the first of those excuses always seemed to me to carry the face of too much carelessness, as if the Salvation of those few were unworthy the trouble, I could not believe but that the latter might, if it had not been too lazily endeavoured, have been removed by proper applications. To which end, I have, ever since my coming into the Government, employed my thoughts how to bring our Tributary Indians to send their Children to be educated at the College, proposing thereby, both their Conversion and the assurance of a more certain peace with them, whilst they had such pledges amongst us, and observing how much these people are governed by interest, I happily fell on the best argument wth them, which was to remitt the whole tribute they are obliged to pay yearly to the Governor, so long as they permitt their Children to be kept at the College. Upon this encouragment and other Sedulous applications, I have had the good fortune to overcome those difficultys that had been formerly thought insuperable, and have

now obtained the Son and Cousin of the King of the Nansemonds, and two Sons of the Chief Rulers of each of the Meherine and Nottoway nations, to be sent to the College, where they are now maintained and Seem to be very well pleased with their change of Life and the kind usage and good Cloathing they have received. In so much as the Queen of the Pamunkeys (another Nation of our Tributarys) encouraged by their reception, has promised speedily to send her Son and the Son of one of her Chief men, and I expect another from the Chickahominys. Tho' these Nations are much less considerable now than they were at the first planting of the Country, Yet they are at this time rather increasing than diminishing, except only the last, but since there are more difficultys to encounter in the Conversion of remote Nations, with whom we have little acquaintance, I can't think it amiss to begin so good a Work first at home, and I hope a successful beginning here may be attended with a greater progress among those more remote, when they see the advantages these reap by it. But, my Lord, I have also made some steps towards engaging the Tuscaruro Indians in the same design, which are the most considerable Nation of any near us, and consist of some thousands of Souls. Some of their Nation (contrary to the inclinations of the rest) having last September joined with other Indians in a barbarous Massacre of divers of her Majesty's Subjects of North Carolina, I took the occasion, among other proposals to demand of the Neutral towns to deliver up Hostages for their future peaceable behaviour, in the same manner as our Tributarys had done, by giving two of the Chief Rulers' Sons of each town to be educated at our College. The Deputys they have sent, have shown a good inclination to it, and I expect a final answer from them by the 20th of this month, And because, if this succeeds, the Donation left by Mr. Boyle for education of Indians at the College, will be too small to Support so many, I have proposed to our General Assembly to settle some Fund for defraying that charge, pressing it with the advantages the Country will receive by having such pledges as will always secure their peace and friendship, as the copy of part of my Speech at the opening of this Session, which I here inclose, will more fully inform your Lord'p, and hope my next will give Y'r Lord'p an account of their Resolutions thereon. Your Lord'p will likewise observe what I have there recommended in behalf of the

Clergy, w^{ch} being but briefly touched in my speech, I shal beg leave here to explain to Y^r Lord^p. I propose that 40 lbs. of tobacco [℥] pole be levyed on every Tithable person throughout the Colony, w^{ch} are computed at 30,000. That this Fund be accounted yearly to a publick Treasurer. That out of that Fund, be paid 16,000 lbs. of tobacco to each Minister, and that the Overplus be applyed towards the erecting new Churches where they are wanting, the repairing and adorning the Churches already built, and providing suitable Ornaments.⁹⁰ This is all I have yet thought fitt to communicate to ye Lower house, the better to draw them in to relish this Scheme, (for they are such a Whimsical Multitude that it requires a great deal of Management to gain their consent to anything that's new, especially where money is required,) but if That succeeds, I intend to get another Clause added by the Council, who compose the upper house, (and are all Gentlemen well affected to ye Church, and that will be ready to concur with me in anything for its Interest,) Viz^t: that the Tobacco be sold, and out of the produce of it £80 [℥] annum paid to every Incumbent, w^{ch} will be a far greater Encouragement than what they have now, while tobacco is low, And considering that there are but 52 parishes at present, and of them not above 40 supplied with Ministers, I'm persuaded this Fund will fully answer the Charge, even in the worst times, and as tobacco rises in value, there will be a Fund for the other also I have proposed. Some people here have been very Sollicitous for my proposing another Scheme for the maintainance of the Clergy by laying a duty of three Shillings [℥] hogshead on all tobacco exported, which they compute would raise 32,000

?

⁹⁰ "The Salary of the Minister is yearly 16,000, and in some parishes 20,000 lbs. of Tobacco; out of which there is a Deduction for Cask, prizing, collecting, &c., about which allowance there are sometimes Disputes, as are also Differences often about the Place, Time, and Manner of delivering it; but all these things might easily be regulated. Tobacco is more commonly at 20s. per Cwt. than at 10; so that certainly (*communibus annis*) it will bring 12s., 8d. a hundred, which make 16,000 (the least salary) amount to £100 per Ann., which it must certainly clear. * * * * *

Besides the Glebe and Salary there is 20s. for every Wedding by License, and 5s. for every Wedding by Banns, with 40s. for a Funeral sermon, which most of the middling people will have." *Hugh Jones, (1724) pp. 71-72.*

£ 400 annum, but as I know such a duty would meet with abundance of opposition from the Merchants, and be but ill received by the Planters themselves, so I am sensible it would not answer the end, for it could only support the present Ministry, but would leave no room for increasing the number without some new fund for their support, which would make the Clergy seem burdensome to the people when their Assembly must be employed every year to find out new means for their maintainance, for though the Country will undoubtedly increase, Yet 'tis hard to promise that the Export of Tobacco can increase proportionably, because there cannot be found a sufficient vent for it, So that the Country must by that project have been in a worse condition in a few years for want of Ministers than 'tis now, whereas the fund I propose will always bear an equal proportion to the increase of the people; and consequently, whenever the erecting a new parish is necessary, there will be a certain Income for the Minister, and I shall think it very happy if I can bring the Clergy on this Foot.

VIRGINIA, December 28th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

Since my last to your Lord'ps (whereof a duplicate is inclosed) the Hostages demanded of the Pamunky and Chickahominy Indians have been delivered, and even more of the former than was expected. The Queen of Pamunkey has not only sent her own Son, with a boy to attend him, but two of the Chief men's sons of that Nation, all decently Cloathed after the English manner, and with a great desire for their education in Literature. So that there are now Hostages from all the Towns of our Tributary Indians. Your Lord'ps will also observe by the inclosed Copy of a Treaty made with eight towns of the Tuscaruros, for fear they are engaged to deliver Hostages for their fidelity, who are in like manner to be educated at our College, but after all these Ages towards the Conversion of the Indians, and for retaining them in a stricter friendship with her

Majesty's Subjects, I cannot but be extremely concerned to find this design slighted by the House of Burgesses, and so violent an humour prevail amongst them for extirpating all the Indians, without distinction of Friends or Enemys, that even a project I laid before them for assisting the College to support the charge of those Hostages has been thrown aside without allowing it a debate in their House, tho' it was proposed on such a foot as would not have cost the Country one farthing. The Deputys from the Tuscaruro towns having been stoped by bad weather and the sickness of several of their number did not arrive here till some days after their appointment. In the meantime the House of Burgesses, upon a representation of the State of Carolina, presented an Address to me to declare War against the Tuscaruro Indians concerned in the late Massacre, and voted that the Sum of Twenty thousand pounds should be raised for that Service; upon which Address it was resolved, with the unanimous opinion of the Council, to make the necessary preparations for carrying on this War, but still with this Reserve, that if the Tuscaruro Indians who were unconcerned in the Massacre should come in and agree to what I had proposed to them at Nottowaytown their Alliance and Assistance should be accepted. Accordingly, as soon as the Deputys arrived, I entered into Conference with them, at which the House of Burgesses were present, and after they had offered the reasons that delayed their coming in, and expressed their readiness to assist us against the Indians concerned in ye late Massacre, and their desire to continue in a strict Friendship with all her Maj'ty's Subjects, and more especially by their interposing for the delivery of the Baron de Graffenried out of the hands of the Enemy, upon my desire, having given proofs of their good disposition to peace, As the Baron owns in the letters then before the House of Burgesses, and acknowledged his liberty to be owing to the good offices of those Indians, I had reason to expect the like Sincerity in performing the Articles of this Treaty, wherein their interest is so much more concerned, and concluded the House of Burgesses would lay hold of so favourable an opportunity of carrying on the War at a less charge than they had projected, but their proceedings were quite contrary, for at the very time these Negotiations were on foot they went on with their bill for raising the Twenty thousand Pounds, and without signifying any dislike to or taking

any notice of the Treaty, appropriated the Fund for carrying on a War against the whole Tuscaruro Nation in general, and insisted strongly on it even after the Treaty was laid before them, but it was difficult to reconcile this violent disposition with the parsimonious temper of that House. They found the raising so great a Sum could not be done without laying several heavy taxes upon themselves, And therefore that they might not seem to recede from their first Resolve, they first made a Suppositious computation of their Funds, wherein they reckoned [that] branch at double the Sum it could probably be supposed to produce, even in the opinion of the most judicious of their own House, and next that they might throw the Expence as much as possible off themselves, they voted that 10 $\frac{1}{2}$ cent. should be laid on all Commodities imported from Great Brittain, whereby a great part of the expence of their War would be borne by the Merchants in England, and that they might appear equally just to their own people; the remaining part of their Taxes were contrived to be laid only upon one-fourth part of the Country, and in which the other three bore no share. It is true, when they saw their designs with relation to the British Commodities too bare faced to pass, they reduced the duty to 6 $\frac{1}{2}$ cent., and made it general on all the Imports, both from Brittain and the plantations, but still retained in their Bill some other Duties disagreeable to the interest of England and unequal upon their own people. And, though the Council endeavoured to divert them by many good reasons from so unjustifiable [a] proceeding, It was to no purpose, they would alter nothing nor allow the Council a Conference, lest some of their House, unwarily drawn into those measures, should be convinced by better arguments, So that finding such an obstinate humour among the Burgesses, to draw me into a War with 2,000 Indians upon a Sham fund that would not defray the charge of a body of three hundred men, and even that intended to be raised in a manner so prejudicial to the Trade of Great Brittain and unjust to the people of this Country, I was forced to let them know I could not pass a bill of that Extraordinary nature, without receiving her Majesty's pleasure thereupon, And that I could not think the Country reduced to those Extraordinary means, when they might more Equally raise the Sum they proposed by a tax of a half penny an acre upon Land, which alone would produce in three years

£25,000; but the rejecting this bill so much disgusted them, that they would enter into no other measures for their own security in the present danger, And tho' they have sat seven weeks, they have not so much as answered one paragraph of my Speech at their meeting. They made no provision for arming their Militia, nor for perfecting and repairing the few works I cast up last Summer for the defence of our principal Rivers, tho' both these were Earnestly recommended to them. I hope Your Lord'ps will not observe anything in my Speech that could justly offend the Assembly, And the Addresses both from the Council, and that from the Burgesses of the 21st of November, whereof the Copys are here inclosed, will shew they were then satisfied with my Conduct, but that unhappy humour of the Country in choosing for their Representatives, persons of mean understandings has produced that of which I expressed my fears in my letter to your Lord'ps the 24th of October, 1710. Such people being rarely possessed with a publick Spirit, and generally bringing along with them the same penurious temper in their publick Transactions that governs them in their private capacities. It is no wonder if this irreconciles them to all measures wherein Expence of money is required, and puts them upon unjustifiable means to save their own pockets, tho' at the Risque of their Country's Safety. It was to no purpose to represent to such people how far my honour was engaged for carrying on this War in concert with the Government of Carolina upon the faith of their Address. No such argument could prevail, so that I was obliged on the 24th inst. to give them a Recess for a month, in hopes by that means to allay their present Extravagancys, and that the nearer approach of their own danger will make them more concerned for their Country's Safety, especially considering the just cause they have to be apprehensive of the Progress of the Indian Enemy, from the deplorable condition of the Province of North Carolina. The fatigues the people there have endured in this Indian War has brought upon them a pestilential distemper which sweeps away great numbers, and so many of the Council there have suffered in it that Collo. Hyde writes he cannot find a Council to advise him in this Conjunction, nor an Assembly that will meet to do any business. The shortness of their crops, occasioned by their Civil Dissensions last Summer and an unusual Drowth that succeeded, together with the Rav-

ages made by the Indians among their Corn and Stocks, gives a dreadful prospect of a Famine, Insomuch that the Baron de Graffenried writes he shall be constrained to abandon the Swiss and Palatines' Settlement, without speedy Succours, the people being already in such despair that they have burnt their own houses rather than be obliged to stay in a place exposed to so many hardships. So that without some speedy measures, Carolina must be entirely lost and the Indians encouraged to carry their Barbaritys into this Colony. I would not here be understood as if I expected any immediate assistance from England to prevent these Evils, for as I am sensible of her Majesty's more urgent occasions that will necessarily obstruct the sending any Forces hither, so I am well assured that this Country is able to carry on the Work effectually if their Assembly will but make efforts proportionable to their strength. And I hope I have served long enough in her Majesty's victorious Armys to know how to deal with so inconsiderable an Enemy, if the Assembly will but enable me, to w^{ch} it is probable a little chastisement near home may very much quicken them. I shall trouble your Lord^{ps} no further with so ungratefull a subject, hoping my next may give a more promising account of the temper of our Assembly, and shall therefore suspend sev^{ll} Reflections that might be made on their later proceedings. For my own part, as I hope I shall always have the discretion and honesty to act in such a manner as may prevent all just Clamours against me in relation to the people under my Government, so I hope I shall also have the grace to take care that the interests of her Majesty and of my mother Country shall never suffer during my administration by any undue compliances with the humour of the people.

I think it necessary to inform your Lord^{ps} that the powder sent in hither by her Maj^{ty}, some years ago, is so much evaporated, that there is not at present one barrell of publick powder in the Country fitt for use, Except 20 half barrells I was forced to impress last August, when we were under apprehensions of an Invasion, out of a Ship that was carrying it to Pennsylvania, which is but a small Magazine for so large a Country.

VIRGINIA, December 28th, 1711.

To my Lord Dartmouth:

MY LORD:

I shall begin this letter where my last concluded, by relating to y^r Lord^p the further progress of my Negotiations for assuring the fidelity of the Tributary Indians and the Tuscaruros. Since my last, the Pamunkys and Chickahoninys have delivered their Hostages, and the former more than was desired, for the queen of Pamunky has not only sent her son to the College with a boy to attend him, but also two of the Chief men's sons of that Nation, all handsomely Cloathed after the English manner, So that there are Hostages from all our Tributary Indians now at the College, who all seem as much desirous of a Liberal education as can be expressed. Yo^r Lord^p will also observe by the copy of a Treaty concluded with 8 Towns of the Tuscaruro Indians the engagements they are under to deliver Hostages, who are in the like manner to be educated and initiated in the principles of Christianity at our College. But after all these endeavours towards the Conversion of the Indians, and for retaining them in a stricter Friendship with her Majesty's Subjects, I cannot but be much concerned to see this design so much Slighted, and such a violent disposition prevail among the Burgesses for exterpating all Indians without distinction of Friends or Enemys, that a project I laid before them for assisting the College to support the charge of these Hostages, tho' proposed on such a foot as would not have cost the Country one farthing, has been thrown aside without allowing it a debate in their House. The Deputys from the Tuscaruro Towns being detained by bad weather and the sickness of some of their members some few days beyond the time they had appointed, The House of Burgesses upon a representation of the State of Carolina did, in the meantime, present an Address to me on the 28th of November to declare War against those of that Nation concerned in the Massacre in Carolina, and soon after voted that £20,000 should be raised for that service, upon which it was concluded with the Unanimous opinion of the Council that the necessary preparations should be made for carrying on this War, but still with this Reserve, that

if the Tuscaruro Indians who had no hand in the Massacre should come in and agree to what I proposed to them at Not-toway town their Alliance and Assistance should be accepted, which was judged to be a more frugal way of carrying on the war, and more effectual, inasmuch as the Indians were better acquainted than we with the Fastnesses to which the Enemy retire. Soon after these Resolutions the Deputys of the Tuscaruro Indians arrived, and because I might satisfy the House of Burgesses how far they could be brought to engage in our quarrell, I invited that House to be present at the Conference I had with the Indians. There they fully excused their not coming in according to appointment. They expressed as much desire to continue in Friendship as could be expected, and agreed to everything proposed to them for assisting in cutting off the Indians concerned in the late Massacre, and even those of their own Nation. But all these professions would not satisfy the House of Burgesses—they would give no Credit to any of their promises, tho' at that time they had before them a letter of the Baron de Graffenried wherein he acknowledges his deliverance out of the hands of the Indian Enemy to be owing to the good Offices of those Indians, in pursuance of their promise to me, and there was no reason to doubt their punctuality in performing the articles of this Treaty, wherein their interest is so much concerned. The Burgesses, without taking any notice of this Treaty, went on with their bill for raising twenty thousand pounds, and appropriated that Fund for carrying on a war against the Tuscaruro Nation in general, upon a bare Surmise that the whole Nation was concerned in the Massacre, tho' it plainly appeared otherwise from the Testimonys of our Indian Traders, who were at that time in their towns. But here it was difficult to reconcile their violent disposition ag'st the Indians with the parsimonious temper of that house. They soon found £20,000 was not easily raised without laying heavy taxes upon themselves, and therefore, that they might not seem to recede from their first resolve, they first made a Suppositious computation of their Funds, wherein they reckoned every branch at double the Sum it would probably be supposed to produce, even in the opinion of the most judicious of their own house, and next, that they might throw the expence as much as possible off themselves, they voted that 10 ⁹/₁₀ cent. should be laid on all

Commodities imported from Great Britain, whereby a great part of the Expense would be born by the Merchants in England; and that they might appear equally just to them as to their own people the remaining part of the taxes were contrived to be laid only upon one-fourth part of the Country, and in which the other three bore no share. It is true that when they saw their designs in relation to the British Commodities too barefaced to pass, they reduced the duty to 6 ⁷/₈ cent. and made it general on all the import both from Brittain and the plantations but still retained in their bill some other duties disagreeable to the interest of England and unequal upon their own people, And tho' the Council endeavoured to divert them by many good reasons from so unjustifiable a proceeding, It was to no purpose, they would alter nothing nor allow the Council so much as a Conference lest some of their House unwarily drawn into those measures should be convinced by better arguments. So that finding such an obstinate humour among the Burgesses to draw me into a War with above 2,000 Indians upon a sham fund that would not defray the charge of a body of 300 men, and even that intended to be raised in a manner so prejudicial to the Trade of Great Brittain and unjust to the people of that Country, I was forced to let them know I could not pass a bill of that Extraordinary nature without receiving her Ma'ty's pleasure thereupon. And that I could not think the Country reduced to those extraordinary means when they might more equally raise the sum they proposed by a tax of a half penny an acre upon Land which alone would produce in three years £25,000. But here the unhappy humour of the Country in choosing for their Representatives persons of narrow fortunes and mean understandings was too largely exemplified and that penurious temper which governs such people in their private Capacities discovered itself in their publick Transactions. That House who had all along showed a Commendable readiness in every other thing, have appeared perfectly irreconcilable to all measures wherein an expence of money became necessary and because they could not be permitted to raise Funds in a manner so prejudicial to the trade of Great Brittain and unjust to their own people, they would raise none at all, nor provide in any manner for their publick safety, And I'm apt to believe their Obstinate insisting upon such unjust

ifiable Taxes and other Clauses, was by some of that House designed as a means to have the Bill rejected, and they freed from a Resolution, which at first they [did] not imagine would occasion so great an Expence. And it is to this niggardly disposition and want of publick Spirit that I must attribute their Slighting the arming of their Militia, and the repairing and perfecting the few works I cast up last Summer at the mouths of the principal Rivers to defend them against foreign Invasion. For after they had by an Address the 25th of November (of which I enclose a copy) acknowledged the usefulness of those Works, and given me thanks for my care therein, how could it else be imagined they would spend 7 weeks of this Session without ever taking further notice of what I had recommended to them so earnestly. Finding so little expectation of prevailing with them by reason, I did on the 24th instant give them leave to adjourn for a month, hoping that time will allay their Extravagancys and quicken their Resolutions for a nearer prospect of their own danger, which they have reason to apprehend from the deplorable condition of North Carolina. The people there have been so harrassed by the Indian Enemy, that their Fatigues have brought among them a pestilential Distemper, which sweeps away great numbers, and so many of the Council have suffered therein, that Collo. Hyde writes he cannot find a member to advise with in this Conjuncture, nor Assembly that will meet to do business. The shortness of their Crop, occasioned by their Civil dissentions last Summer, and unusual Drought that succeeded, together with the Ravages made by the Indians among their Stocks and Corn, give a dreadful prospect of a Famine. In so much that the Baron de Graffenried writes he must be forced with the Swiss and Palatines to abandon their Settlement, the people being already in such despair that they have burnt their own houses rather than be obliged to stay in a place exposed to the Incursions of the Indians, and want of all necessities. So that without speedy succors that Country must be intirely lost, and the Indians encouraged to make this Colony the next Scene of their Barbaritys. But here, my Lord, I would not be understood as if I expected any imediate assistance from England to prevent these Evils, for, as I am very sensible that her Majesty's other great occasions will be an impediment to the sending any fforces hither, So I am well assured this Country is

able to do the work effectually if their Assembly will but make Efforts proportionable to their Strength, and I hope I have served long enough in her Majesty's victorious Armies to know how to deal with so despicable an Enemy, if the Assembly will concur in suitable measures, to which nothing is more like to prompt them than a little Chastisement nearer home. Time will soon show what may be expected of them, Till then I shall forbear troubling Your Lord'p with a Subject so ungratefull, and shall beg leave to conclude that as it shall always be my care to act with that discretion and honesty that the people may have no just cause to blame my conduct, So I hope I shall have the grace and courage to oppose all unreasonable attempts on her Majesty's prerogative or the interests of my Mother Country, nor permitt either to suffer during my administration by any undue Compliances with the humours of the people.

VIRGINIA, Feb'y 8th, 1711.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS :

I have chosen this first Opportunity by an out-port Ship to hasten to Your Lord'ps the Journals of our late Assembly, tho' that of the House of Burgesses is not compleated, and the latter part only copyed from their Votes, as they were returned to me every night. Your Lord'ps will observe by these Journals the matters upon which the House of Burgesses and I have chiefly differed, and I shall only here continue the bare relation of their Transactions upon their return after their Adjournment, without any Comment, since Y'r Lord'ps are better able to judge what may be the consequences of such unaccountable proceedings, and what Remedys are proper for checking the irregularitys of plantation Assemblys. According to what I had the honour to write your Lord'ps in my last, I hoped the Recess I gave the House of Burgesses 'till the 24th of last month would have been sufficient time for them to reflect on their former irregularitys, and brought them together with a better disposition for the publick Service, but they no sooner mett upon their

Adjournment than they began to give indications of the same obstinate temper with which they separated by continuing their contentions with the Council, and by adhering to the disallowance of the just Claims of many publick Creditors, tho' they had not the least Objection against the usefulness of their Services for the Security of the Country. I was however, willing to wait some days longer in expectation of their entering on new measures to defend themselves in time of danger, but perceiving no advances therein, I thought it necessary on the 28th past to quicken them by a speech, wherein I took occasion to answer sundry misrepresentations of matters of Fact in the Address on the 21st of December, and likewise to assure them that I was ready to yield to anything they could in justice and reason demand (which y'r Lord'ps will find in the Burgesses' Journal, page 77), but this had no better effect than to put them anew upon a justification of their former proceedings, without the least show of a more just behaviour for the future. So that, finding nothing could be expected from a sett of men so regardless of their duty to the Country, I thought it more advisable to put an end to this Session than to burthen the people by keeping them longer together to prosecute their fruitless Contentions, and on the last of January dissolved the Assembly, after having passed the few bills they had prepared, which were only two public and two private Acts, besides that for appointing Rangers which I pass'd in December. The shortness of time will not allow me to send by this Conveyance the transcript of these Acts, but your Lord'ps will see by the Titles they are of no great consequence.

I have already intimated to Y'r Lord'ps the reasons that obliged me to reject the bill prepared by the Burgesses for raising money to carry on a War against the Indians with which I hope Y'r Lord'ps will not be dissatisfied. For had I passed it on terms so prejudicial to the interest of Great Britain and unjust to the people here, I could neither have been excusable to her Majesty nor this Country, besides the ill consequences of engaging in a War upon a deficient fund, to be supplied by the same unjustifiable means, if not worse than those on which it was first began, or else the public Creditors left for ever unpaid. The perverting the Sense of Laws already made, with no other intent than to avoid the payment of the Public Debts, such as the charge of Militia that attended at Nottoway town at the

Conference with the Tuscaruro Indians, and the expence of a Spy boat fitted out in pursuance of her Majesty's commands in the late alarm to discover the approach of any Enemy, shows what little dependence there is on the faith of a House of Burgesses to be for the public benefit, Yet no arguments either of mine or the Council could obtain the least allowance for them. This Obstinacy is the more remarkable in that the former might have been discharged according to a proposal of the Council in their Journal page 47 for less than the value of 50 lb by only exempting the Militia from this year's publick Levy, and that of the Spy boat was so frugally managed that the Expence for 3 months amounted only to £121. This last, with about 100 lb for the Subsistance of 80 French Prisoners, and between 40 and 50 lb expended in raising the Batterys, were all the money payments insisted on in the Book of Claims, and so strenuously refused by the Burgesses, that they chose rather to let the Book of Claims remain unpassed and the whole Country to suffer for want of laying the publick Levy, than yield to the just demands of the people in so trifling a sum. These are the proceedings which obliged me to put an end to this Assembly and by which the late Burgesses hope to recommend themselves to the populace upon a received opinion among them, that he is the best Patriot that most violently opposes all Overtures for raising money, let the occasion be what it will. A Character, which they may in some measures, be excused for aiming at, since the far greater part of the late Burgesses had scarce any other merit to qualify them for the peoples' Choice. I have here represented to Your Lord'ps their faults with the same freedom I used in commending their behaviour in their Sessions last year, and whoever will compare the proceedings of that Session with the incongruities of this, would hardly believe the same men could act so differently, but this may be easily accounted for when the persons are considered whose want of publick Spirit has irreconciled them to everything which required expence, And such were most of the Affairs recommended to them this Session. But whatever pretences they have made, it now plainly appears that the Vote of raising £20,000, which, indeed, is a great Sum for this Country, was no other than a design of some to raise none at all. Since under pretence of raising so considerable a Sum, they believed they might more easily have recourse to extra-

ordinary means which they were sure would never pass. For had they really intended to carry on the war against the Indians, they could not have done it in a more frugal way than by the Treaty I concluded with the Turcaruros, but tho' that was entered into at the instance of their own house, They have made no provision for enabling me to perform the Terms of it, indeed some of that House have, since the dissolution, owned more freely than they would do while sitting, most of the irregularitys of their proceedings are owing to some rash votes passed without Foresight, which they could not afterwards get over without breaking through the Rules of their House, and so they chose rather to let the Country suffer than own themselves in an error. After what I have here represented, I think it necessary to acquaint your Lord'ps that these differences with the House of Burgesses have made none between me and the Country, for I have not had the least dispute with any one Member of the Council, and even these very persons who composed the House of Burgesses have all along declared as much Satisfaction with my administration as with any Governor they ever had, tho' your Lord'ps will observe by my Speeches I have not flattered them, So that the management of the late Assembly may, in all probability, give a new turn to the humours of the people, and make [them] chuse for their next Representatives men of more generous and disinterested principles, but I shall first see some signs of such a disposition before I call another Assembly. In the meantime I am taking all necessary precautions to secure the Country against the Indians by keeping the Tuscaruros in our interest, to which purpose several Gentlemen of the Council have offered to advance money on the Credit of the Revenue for enabling me to perform the Treaty with them, and I hope I shall by that means put a speedy end to the present danger, unless the French (who, 'tis said, now trade with Indians not very remote) should find means to unite their Indians with those concerned in the Massacre, and furnish them with arms and ammunition to attack us. This is the more to be feared, because I have advice from persons who have lately lived among the Indians, that the Senecas (a numerous people) have of late been very industrious to invite all the Scattered bodys of Indians on the Frontiers of this and the Neighbouring Governments, and seem more particularly provoked against

us on account of one of their Kings being killed some time ago by an Inhabitant of this Colony as he was hunting. If they should for this prosecute a Revenge, such a Combination of all our Neighbouring Indians might put our Frontiers in a very unhappy condition, considering how ill we are provided to encounter an Enemy that is no other ways to be reduced than by a continual pursuit through the Woods and Desarts, A Fatigue which our people will never be able to endure without the conveniency of Tents to secure them against the Weather. I therefore humbly offer to Your Lord's consideration to move her Maj'ty for a Supply out of the Tower of about three hundred Soldiers' Tents, some small arms and powder, with two brass three pounders mounted on field Carriages for an expedition. Such a Supply would be of the greater Service, if we should be reduced to a necessity of pursuing the Indians, or of attacking them in their Forts, and without which it will be extremely difficult to free our selves effectually from the incursions of that Enemy. At present the danger seems much more to threaten North Carolina, where the Indians daily gather strength, and have already besieged a party of the Inhabitants in a small Fort they had built for their protection, the distractions among themselves give the Indians all the opportunitys they could wish of destroying them, for as our Burgesses, for their private interests, have disappointed all means of defending the Country, So those of Carolina, on a worse principle, have resolved to sacrifice that province to their private Resentment; and because they could not introduce into the Government the persons most obnoxious for the late Rebellion and Civil War there, they will make no provision for defending any part of the Country, and are now in like manner dissolved without doing any business. The Baron de Graffenreid being obliged, while he was prisoner among the Indians, to conclude a Neutrality for himself and his Palatines, lives as yet undisturbed by the Heathen, but is sufficiently persecuted by the people of Carolina for not breaking with the Indians, tho' will afford him neither provisions of War or Victuals nor Assistance from them. He has always declared his readiness to enter into a War as soon as he should be assisted to prosecute it, but it would be madness in him to expose his handfull of people to the fury of the Indians, without some better assurance of help than the present confusions in that province

gives him reason to hope for, and the Indians would soon Either Entirely destroy that settlement or starve them out of the place by killing their stocks and hindering them from planting corn. In the meantime the people of Carolina receive very great advantage by this Neutrality, for by that means the Baron has an opportunity of discovering and communicating to them all the designs of the Indians, tho' he runs the Risque of paying dear for it if they ever come to know it. This makes him so apprehensive of his danger from them, and so diffident of help or even justice from the Government under which he is, that he has made some efforts to remove with the Palatines to this Colony upon some of her Majesty's Lands; and since such a number of people as he may bring with him, with what he proposes to invite over from Swisserland and Germany, will be of great advantage to this Country and prove a strong Barrier against the incursions of the Indians if they were properly disposed above our Inhabitants. I pray your Lord'ps' directions what encouragement ought to be given to their design, either as to the quantity of Land or the terms of granting it. Y'r Lord'ps will also be pleased to instruct me as to the Settlement of a great number of the other Inhabitants of North Carolina who I understand design to remove hither for protection. I beg leave to represent to your Lord'ps the necessity of some speedy orders for this Colony, Maryland and Carolina to assist each other in case either be attacked; and if Your Lord'ps shall think fitt to propose this to her Majesty I humbly offer that the Regulation of that Assistance may not be left to the precarious humour of an Assembly, but that your Lord'ps will be pleased to consider of some more proper method for rendering it effectual.

I should have sent ere now an account of the Stores of War in this Country, but considering these accounts have been transmitted both by Collo. Nott and Mr. President Jenings,⁹¹ and none other sent hither since, I thought it needless to trouble Your Lord'ps with an account which would contain only the same thing without any alterations except as I have already intimated to Your Lord'ps, the powder is much more wasted and decayed than it was then.

⁹¹ Edmund Jenings, President of the Council and acting Governor of the Colony from the death of Edward Nott in August, 1706, until superseded by Spotswood June 23, 1710.

VIRGINIA, February ye 8th, 1711.

*To the Sec'y of State.*⁹²

MY LORD:

I'm sorry that I must here continue the disagreeable account of the irregular proceedings of our late Assembly, which, having mett according to the Adjournment mentioned in my last, began with the same ill temper with which they separated, so that I was obliged, on the 31st of the last month, to put an end to their contentions by dissolution. The shortness of time will not give me leave to send by this Conveyance the transcript of their Journals and the few Laws they have passed, which are only three publick and two private Acts, and neither of them of much consequence. No arguments of mine or of the Council could prevail with the House of Burgesses to enter in any measures for the defence of the Country, or for making good the Treaty with the Tuscaruros, tho' even that was concluded at the instances of their House, the just Claims of many publick Creditors obstinately rejected after the Services had been approved as a general benefitt to the Country, and in short, they were resolved not to depart from that general Maxim of recommending themselves to the people by opposing everything that required expence, and, indeed, most of the late Burgesses had reason, since that was the only qualification they had to meritt the peoples' choice, but tho' this has made some difference between me and the Burgesses, it has occasioned none with the Country. I have not had the least dispute with any one Member of the Council nor do these very persons who composed the House of Burgesses show any dissatisfaction w'th my administration, but on the contrary express as much confidence in my management as in any Governor they have ever had, so that this unaccountable behaviour of the late Assembly, will in all probability give a new turn to the humour of the people and make them chose for their next Representatives persons of more disinterested principles, but I shall be first well assured of that disposition before I call another Assembly.

In the meantime I'm taking all necessary precautions for securing the Country against the Indians, and by the voluntary

⁹² The Earl of Nottingham.

offers of several Gentlemen of the Council to advance money on the Credit of the Revenue for making good the Treaty with the Tuscaruro Indians I hope to keep that Nation in our interest, and by that means put a speedy end to the present danger, unless the French (who, 'tis now said, trade with Indians not very remote) should find means to unite their Indians with those concerned in the Massacre and furnish them with arms and ammunition to attack us. This is the more to be fear'd because I have advice from persons who have lately lived among the Indians on the frontiers of this and the neighbouring Governments, and seem more particularly provoked against us on account of one of their Kings being killed some time ago by an Inhabitant of this Colony as he was hunting. If they should for this prosecute a Revenge, such a Combination of all of our Neighbouring Indians might put our frontiers in a very unhappy condition, considering how ill we are provided to encounter an Enemy that is no otherwise to be reduced but by a continual pursuit through the Woods and Desarts, A fatigue which our people will never be able to endure without the conveniency of Tents to secure them against the weather. I therefore humbly offer to Your Lord'ps' consideration to move her Majesty for a supply out of the Tower of about three hundred Soldiers' Tents, some small arms and powder, with two brass three pounders, mounted on Field Carriages, for an expedition. Such a supply would be of the greatest Service if we should be reduced to a necessity of pursuing the Indians, or of attacking them in the Forts, and without which it will be extreemly difficult to free ourselves effectually from the incursions of the Enemy, but the present danger seems much more to threaten North Carolina, where the Indians daily gather more Strength, and have already besieged a party of the Inhabitants in a small ffort they built for their better security. That Country is so miserably distracted that they are not like to do anything for their own defence, their late Assembly having in a manner resolved to sacrifice the Country to the rage of the Heathen, because they could not introduce into the Government the persons most Obnoxious for fomenting the late Rebellion and Civil War there. The Palatines are the only persons who now live undisturbed upon a Neutrality concluded with the Indians by the Baron de Graffenreid while he was their prisoner, and for which he is sufficiently persecuted by the other Inhabi-

tants, who would have him enter into a War with the Indians, without affording him the least Assistance, either of provisions of War or victuals, of both which he is in mighty want, but has always declared his readiness to brake with the Indians as soon as the other Inhabitants shall take measures to prosecute a War effectually, and to do it sooner would only expose his handfull of people to be destroyed or starved out of the place, and he depends so little on ye Faith of the Indians, or on the good nature of his Neighbours, that he has lately proposed to me to remove with the Palatines into this Country, to settle on her Majesty's Land, as well as divers other Inhabitants of Carolina, who despair of any protection there. The settlement of the Palatines, together with such a number as the Baron proposes to invite from Swisserland and Germany, would prove of good benefitt to this Country, and a strong barrier against the incursions of the Indians, if duly disposed above our Inhabitants, I must therefore pray Your Lord'ps' directions what encouragements may be proper to be given for such a design either in the quantity of Land or the terms of granting it.

I must also pray Your Lord'ps to move her Majesty for some speedy orders that this Colony, Maryland, and Carolina, may assist each other if either be attacked, and since such an Assistance may be very precarious if left to the Regulation of an Assembly, Your Lord'ps will also be pleased to consider of some more effectual means than their Resolutions.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To my Lord Dartmouth:

MY LORD:

Having in my last of the 8th of February (whereof the Duplicate is inclosed) given yo'r Lord'p an acco't of the State of Affairs in these parts with relation to the Indians, I shall only here beg leave to inform your Lord'p that the apprehensions of our danger from that enemy are no ways lessened since, for notwithstanding the Government of South Carolina

sent a body of 700 Indians under some Officers of that province to the assistance of North Carolina, and that about the latter end of January they fell upon some of the Tuscaruro towns with tolerable success, yet their subsequent attempts have not been answerable to that beginning; the desertion of that body of Indians proved so great that after the first Rencontre scarce 200 of the seven remained, and those afterwards being joined by some of the Militia of that County were repulsed with consid'ble Loss in an Attack on one of the Enemy's fforts, and the Assembly of North Carolina, brought to a better sense of their danger, have made some extraordinary efforts to raise men for carrying on the War, and had made application for 200 men from hence, which I had actually ordered to march to their Assistance, whereby there was great hopes of doing some consid'ble service ag't the Enemy. Yet the Commander of the Carolina fforces, without waiting the arrival of those succours, was so weak as to clap up a peace with the Indians upon very unaccountable conditions, and suffered about 160 of them to escape after he had reduced them to the last extremity, and could not have missed taking their Fort in a few hours, nor of breaking (in all humane probability) the power of those Indians, had he but waited for the arrival of the succours designed him. This unadvised Step has not only disappointed the measure projected for attacking the Indians with success, but will no doubt render them more insolent when they perceive how weakly they have hitherto been attacked and how easily they can obtain a peace after all the barbaritys they have committed. As nobody believes the Indians will keep this peace longer than they see an apparent advantage, I expect to hear of some sudden blow from them, either here or in Carolina, and am taking all the care I can to guard our Frontiers. And here I beg leave to represent to your Lord'p the ill consequences of leaving the Government entirely without money to answer its exigencys in so dangerous a Conjuncture, the Revenue of 2s. p hogshead appropriated for support of the Government is at present so deficient that the last half year's Sallary and Contingent charges are yet in arrears and her Majesty's Revenue of Quitt-rents the only certain Fund that could be applyed for answering a sudden expence is by a late Warrant from her Majesty appointed to be remitted into the Excheq'r as far as £3,000, which is more than it can raise in near three years' time unless the price of Tobacco

advances very much. If I should call an Assembly to provide for the Security of the Country, besides the usual delays in the forms of their proceedings, Your Lord'p will be pleased to consider whether it is consistent with her Maj'ty's Service or the interest of Great Brittain to permitt them to raise money in the manner they attempted last Session. For tho' I don't doubt I could easily persuade the Assembly to enter into a War with the Indians and to vote money for carrying it on, Yet as the humour of the people runs at present I'm persuaded they would propose taxing the Import of Goods from Great Brittain as one of their Chief Funds, and since I can never in my own opinion concur with them in such a project I beg Your Lord'p's directions before I call another Assembly, how far I may condescend to their humour in a matter of such consequence. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS:

Since my last letter to Y'r Lord'ps of February (of which the Duplicate is inclosed) I had the hon'r to receive Your Lord'ps of the 26th of October and 22d of November, 1711, and shall by the return of our Fleet transmitt to Your Lord'ps all the accounts req'd by the severál articles of my instructions mentioned in the former of those letters together with the Journals of Councils and the Duplicates of those of the Assembly, being unwilling to trust them now to the uncertain Conveyance of a runing Ship. I have, nevertheless, sent Your Lord'ps the copys of the laws passed last Session of Assembly, and shall also send the Duplicates of those by the Fleet. As to the proceedings in settling the Boundaries with Carolina, of which yo'r Lord'ps desire an account in your letter of the 22d of November, I have writt sundry times to the Governor of that province to appoint persons for adjusting thereof, but he tells me he has received no directions therein from the Lords Proprietors, So that your

Lord'ps will be pleased to consider of some further means to quicken the proprietors to put a speedy end to the dispute. We continue still under the apprehensions of being attacked by the Indians, for notwithstanding the Government of South Carolina sent a body of seven hundred of their Indians, commanded by some Officers of that Province, to the assistance of the people of North Carolina, and that about the latter end of last January they fell upon some Towns of the Tuscaruros with pretty good Success, yet after the first Rancounter near 500 of them deserted, So that their Commander did not find himself in a condition to improve the consternation into which that sudden Eruption had put the Enemy, and in his next Attempt upon one of their Forts, he was forced to draw off with considerable Loss, however, this seasonable Succour put new life into the people of that Province, and a new Assembly being called, passed an Act to raise £4,000 for prosecuting the war against the Indian Enemy, and because they could not raise a sufficient body of men in that Province, where the Quakers make a great number of the Inhabitants, they made application to me for an assistance of 200 men from this Colony. The apparent danger to which her Majesty's Subjects there were exposed, more especially by the Indians gathering fresh Courage upon the Repulse they had given the South Carolina forces, together with the just grounds there appeared to believe that the whole Tuscaruro Nation were confederated with those concerned in the Massacre, not only from their failing to perform any one of the engagements they had entered into with this Government, the trifling excuses they made for that failure at their coming into me in March last, and the discoveries of their intrigues to Seduce our Tributary Indians to join with them, were sufficient Motives for agreeing to the Assistance desired by Carolina, as the most probable means to divert the Storm from our own Frontiers. So that upon a full debate in two several Councils, I had the unanimous advice of the whole Council to send 100 men of our Inhabitants and 100 of our Tributary Indians to the Assistance of Carolina, and because the Assembly had left me no Fund to answer such an Occasion, and that there remained nothing in bank upon the Revenue of Two Shillings p hogshead, there was a necessity to defray the charge of this Expedition out of her Majesty's Revenue of Quitt-

rents, since the necessity was so pressing as would not admitt of the forms of calling an Assembly and the delays incident to their proceedings; but it was also agreed to demand of the Government of Carolina to enter into a previous engagement in behalf of the Lords proprietors, that whatever sum should be employed for this Service out of her Majesty's Quitt rents should be refunded by the Lords propr's, if her Majesty thought fitt to demand it, as being more immediately employed for the protection of their Government. Upon this, I proceeded to appoint the Rendevouze of the Soldiers, and desired a Conference with the Governor of North Carolina for the better carrying on this Service, but at my meeting him, he told me, with great concern, that the Commander sent from South Carolina had, without his knowledge, clapt up a peace with the Indians upon very unwarrantable conditions, at a time when he had reduced one of their Forts to the last Extremity, and could not have missed taking it in a few hours, nor of breaking entirely the power of that enemy, if he would have awaited the arrival of the Succours from hence and the force then raising in North Carolina to joine him. This weakness in the Conduct of their Affairs, together with a more unaccountable Obstinacy in the Council of that province in refusing to submit to her Majesty's determination, the repayment of the money disbursed here for their assistance, or of furnishing so much as provisions for the Forces from hence, is so great a discouragement to their Neighbours as 'tis encouraging to the Heathen, who are not such Fools as not to perceive their weak efforts in carrying on the War, as well as their easiness in making peace. And it happened very luckily on this occasion that I had not entered any of the Soldiers of this Government in pay before I knew of this event, so that all the expense is saved, and I have now nothing more to think of than the defending our own frontiers against the Inroads of the Tuscururos whenever they find themselves in a condition to break this peace, which nobody believes will be long lived.

I beg leave here to represent to Your Lordps the ill consequences of leaving this Government without money to apply towards its exigencies in such a Conjunction as this is, for tho' all the ballance of the Quitt-rents was last year, by her Majesty's order, applied towards buying provisions for the Forces at Canada, and consid'ble Sums more advanced upon ye Credit

thereof by the Receiver Gen^ll, Myself and sev^ll other persons for that service, which still remain undischarged, Yet here is a late order, sent hither from the Treasury for remitting into the Excheq^r no less than £3,000 out of that Revenue, which is more than it can reasonably be supposed to raise in three years' time, and if this Country should be attacked either by the Indians or any other Enemy while the Revenue of two Shillings ^{per} hogs-head is so low that the whole of last year's Sallarys are yet in Arrear, I know not by what means men can be raised or subsisted to defend the Country. 'Tis true if I should call an Assembly I might easily persuade them to declare a War against the Indians, and to raise money for carrying it on, but then Your Lord^{ps} will be pleased to consider whether it be consistent with her Majesty's Service or the interest of Great Britain to permitt them to raise Taxes in the manner they projected at their last session, and I am very confident, as the humour of the Country runs now, they would fall upon the same method of taxing Brittish Manufacturers, and therefore I must beg Your Lord^{ps}' directions, before I call an Assembly, how far I ought to Condescend to the disposition of the people in a matter wherein I can't, in my own private Opinion, concur with them. Amongst other Claims mentioned in my last as rejected by the Assembly, Your Lord^{ps} will observe that about £270 for the charge of the Spy boat fitted out by her Majesty's directions upon the alarm last Summer, some few charges about mounting the Great guns, and the Subsistence of 80 French prisoners of War, which I sent home by the last Fleet, the persons who disbursed this money are still unpaid and uneasy upon their disappointment, and I am as much concerned that there is not money even for the discharge of that small Debt, and since it was expended for her Majesty's Service, it would very much encourage people on the like occasions if I had directions to defray that charge out of the Quitt-rents, in case the publick Revenue of this Government still proves deficient. It is a great Satisfaction to me to find by Your Lord^{ps}' of the 22d of Novem^r, that my endeavour in Supplying Collo. Hunter with pork for the Canada expedition is acceptable to Your Lord^{ps}, and I beg Y^r Lord^{ps} will be pleased to accept of my humble acknowledgments for your offer of Using your interest with my Lord high Treasurer in my behalf. I have here sent the account of what money I have been in disburse on that occasion. It

has been examined and passed in Council, and I flatter myself there will be no Objection made against the Frugality of my management, since it will appear by the account that Notwithstanding the great demand for pork at that time, the first cost and whole charges of receiving, new pickling and shipping, doth very little exceed forty-five shillings ^{per} barrel, a price frequently paid here at that season of the year as the prime Cost in private dealings, and I can with truth assure Your Lord'ps that I proposed no gain to my self in this purchase, so I hope that it will not be thought reasonable that I should be a Loser by lying any longer out of my money, or suffering in my Credit with the people to whom I stand still engaged for part of it.

According to what I had the hon'r to write to Your Lord'ps in my last, The Baron de Graffenreid is come hither with a design to settle himself and sev'll Swiss familys in the fforks of Potomack, but when he expected to have held his Land there of her Majesty, he now finds Claims made to it both by the Proprietors of Maryland and the Northern Neck.⁹⁸ The Lord Baltimore's Agents claiming it in his behalf to the head springs of the South West Branch of Potomack, and my Lady Fairfax's Agent claiming to the head Springs of the North West branch, tho' by the

⁹⁸ This immense tract which was granted by Charles II, in the 21st year of his reign, to Lord Hopton and others, and became by purchase, the sole right of Lord Thomas Culpeper, to whom it was repatented—comprised the counties of Lancaster, Northumberland, Richmond, Westmoreland, Stafford, King George, Prince William, Fairfax, Loudoun, Fauquier, Culpeper, Madison, Page, Shenandoah, Hardy, Hampshire, Morgan, Berkeley, Jefferson and Frederick. His daughter Catharine married Thomas Lord Fairfax, to whom she brought as dower the Northern Neck.

Their son, Thomas Fairfax, 6th Lord and Baron Cameron, in consequence of continued territorial disputes, petitioned the King, in 1733, to order a Commission to ascertain the bounds of his patent. Hence commissioners were appointed severally in behalf of the crown and of Lord Fairfax. These were respectively Wm. Byrd, John Robinson and John Grymes; and William Beverley, William Fairfax and Charles Carter. They made their report Dec. 14, 1736, to the Council for plantation affairs, which body, on the 6th of April, 1745, confirmed the report, which was in turn confirmed by the King, who ordered the appointment of Commissioners to run and mark the dividing line. This was done in 1746. The original journal of the expedition, kept by Major Thomas Lewis, is now in the possession of his descendant, Hon. John F. Lewis, Lt. Governor of Virginia. The conflicting rights of the Northern Neck patent with those claimed by Jost Hite and others, have been the cause of innumerable

Copys of the grants which I have seen, it appears to me that her Majesty has the Right to that Tract of Land exclusive of both Proprietors. I have writt to the Baron to send me a Draught of both those Branches, which I shall by the first Opportunity transmitt to Your Lord'ps, and as the Record of both Grants may be seen in the Chancery Office, I shall wait Your Lord'ps' directions whether it be necessary to insist on her Majesty's Right. Amongst other Frauds heretofore used for obtaining Rights for taking up Land in this Colony, (which I am endeavouring to prevent,) I have observed that most of the Rights upon which Patents are sued out are for the importation of persons into the Northern Neck. The Charter granted by King Charles the Second to this Colony intitles every person coming to dwell here to 50 acres of Land not already granted. But the proprietors of the Northern Neck not thinking themselves bound to grant their Land on such a Right, the people who are imported into that part of this Colony generally assign their Rights to others, who, by virtue thereof, Claim Land of her Majesty; but it being, in my opinion, very unreasonable that the persons employed in the improvement of the Proprietors' Land should be intitled to the same privilege as those who improve her Majesty's Land I have stopt the granting of patents upon those Rights until her Majesty's pleasure be signified therein. The ascertaining the value of foreign gold Coins has been attempted in both the late Sessions of Assembly, and is what the people are very earnest for. 'Tis true there are some inconveniencys which would accrue to the Country by putting a certain value upon gold, which I don't observe to be fixed in any other Country, and for that reason, as well as that her Majesty had not rated it in her proclamation with the Silver Coins, I did not think fitt to pass the Act prepared for that purpose last session, but, since it is like, the As-

law suits, which crowded the records of the State courts to a period advanced into the 19th century. There was an attempt made by Maryland again in 1832, to extend her boundary by an infraction of the line established in 1746.

For details regarding the Northern Neck grant and subsequent disputes, see *Kercheval's History of the Valley*, 2d edition, 1850, pp. 138-152. A Map of the survey of the Northern Neck is among those accompanying the Report of the Commissioners to settle the Boundary Line between Virginia and Maryland, published by the State in 1873.

sembly may again on their next meeting fall into the same project of rating foreign gold, as a matter which they believe of consequence to their Trade, I should be glad to have Your Lord'ps' opinion thereupon, together with an Estimate from the Mint at what rate it may be allowed to pass here. Collo. Bassett has received her Majesty's [instruction] for his being again of the Council, but as it doth not mention his being admitted into his former place at that Board, he has declined being sworne. As her Majesty was pleased to grant that favour to Collo. Digges, Collo. Smith⁹⁴ and Collo. Lewis⁹⁵ upon their readmission into the Council I hope that it is only an Omission, and not intended to cast a blott upon this Gentleman, and that her Majesty will be pleased to approve of his taking post according to his former precedency, which is next to Collo. Ludwell. I shall be glad to receive this Signification of her Maj'ty's pleasure either from Your Lord'ps or her Majesty's principall Secretary of State, without putting Collo. Bassett to a new expence of Fees, which doth not well suit with a place where there is no profit to be reaped.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To the Earl of Oxford,⁹⁶ L'd Treas'r :

MY LORD :

Sometime ago I had the hon'r to receive her Majesty's Warrant Countersigned by your Lord'p for remitting into the Excheq'r the sum of £3,000, out of the Quitt-rents of this Colony, and have given my directions to the Receiver Gen'll accordingly, but I'm sorry the State of that Revenue is such as

⁹⁴ Col. Nicholas Smith, of Kiquotan. He died prior to March 14th, 1735.

⁹⁵ Col. John Lewis, of Gloucester, the son of Robert Lewis, an emigrant from Wales.

⁹⁶ Robert Harley, an able statesman and author, born in London in 1661, Speaker of House of Commons in 1702 and afterwards Secretary of State; Commissioner of the Treasury and Chancellor of the Exchequer in 1710; raised to the peerage as Earl of Oxford and Earl Mortimer in 1711, and made Lord High Treasurer. He died May 21, 1727.

that her Majesty's order cannot be complied with in its fullest Latitude as Yo'r Lord'p may be more fully informed by the accounts of the hands of Mr. Blathwayt, Auditor Genll of the Plantations, for whom Collo. Hunter, and Collo. Nicholson notified to me last year that they were impowered by her Majesty [in] Instructions to imploy the whole Quitt-rents of this Colony in the purchase of provisions for ye Forces in ye Canada Expedition. [As] there remained only in the Receiver's hands, a ballance of that Revenue, the sum of £433. 0. 11¼, upon Collo. Hunter's pressing instances for buying up all the pork that could be had in this Colony, and representing that without a consid'ble Supply from home, he found the service might suffer, because he could get none of that Species of provision in the Neighbouring Governm'ts, there was advanced by the Rec'r Gen'll upon the Credit of the income of that Revenue, the Sum of £433. 2. 3¾, and I engaged my own Credit for a further Sum of £1232. 18. 6., rather than the Expedition should be disappointed for want of any Supplys that could be obtained here, and for this I desired Collo. Hunter to draw bills pursuant to his Instructions, and if y'r Lord'p do not think fitt that those bills be answered out of the Treasury, there will be a greater ballance due than can be discharged by all that hath arisen on the Quitt-rents since. I here inclose to y'r Lord'p the account of the provisions bought in this Country, which has been examined by the Auditor of her Majesty's Revenues, and whoever knows the Circumstances of this Colony will, I'm sure, acknowledge the industry that must have been used to obtain so large a quantity at that season of the year, as well as the frugality in the purchase thereof, for notwithstanding a consid'ble part of it was brought from Maryland and Carolina, yet the prime cost and the whole charges of transportation, receiving, new pickling, Cooperage, &c., doth only amount to about 45 Shillings p̄ barrrell. I'm very sensible of the great Occasions her Majesty has for money to defray the charge of this heavy war, and should therefore be very loath to offer anything to disappoint her Majesty's intentions in relation to the Sum demanded from hence, but as my station obliges me faithfully to represent whatever may be for her Majesty's Service in this Colony, I therefore humbly offer to your Lord'ps prudent consideration whether in present danger

with which this Colony is threatened by the barbarous Indians, who committed the late Massacre in Carolina, it is safe to leave this Government without any money in bank to answer a sudden Emergency. I hope Your Lord'ps will be pleased to put a favorable construction upon what I have here represented as proceeding from the Zeal I shall ever preserve for her Majesty's Service, and believe me to be with the greatest Respect.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To the B'p of London :

MY LORD:

I am honoured with y'r Lord'p's by Mr. Bell⁹⁷ and Mr. Mackenzie,⁹⁸ whom I have sent to parishes where their Labours are like to be most acceptable. Tho' I could not prevail with our Assembly to settle a Fund for the Education of Indian Children at the College according to the proposal mentioned in my last, yet I have not for that reason slackened my endeavours for the conversion of that people. There are now 14 Indian Children at the College, and I speedily expect six more from our Neighbouring Nations. I hope this Design will meet with encouragement both from the Society for propagating the Gospel and from Nobility and Gentry of England, who cannot in my opinion imploy their Charity to better purpose than by laying such a Foundation for bringing a great many Souls to the Christian faith, and I doubt not y'r Lord'p's good Offices therein, not only in respect to the College, which will have a charge beyond their ability to support, but out of your own pious disposition to work of this nature. I gave your Lord'p an account of Mr. Le Fevre's admission into the College upon your Lord'p's recommendation, and am now to acquaint you that after a Tryal of three-quarters of a year he appeared so negligent in all the posts of duty and

⁹⁷ Rev. John Bell, Rector of Christ Church parish, Middlesex county.

⁹⁸ Commissary Thomas Dawson, writing to the Bishop of London, Nov. 15, 1754, says: "Mr. Agnew in the place of Mr. Mackenzie, deceased, in Suffolk and Nansemond." *Perry's Virginia Church Papers*, pp. 431-2.

guilty of some other very great irregularitys, that the Governors of the College could no longer bear with him, and were obliged to remove him from his Office, tho' at the same time out of Regard to the hon'ble recommendation he brought with him they continued his Sallary for four months longer than he officiated. I'm apt to believe most of his irregularitys were owing to an idle hussy he brought over with him, because since she left him (for I got her a passage back to England last February) he has left off that scandalous Custom of drinking, and appears quite another man, being now settled at a Gentleman's house for teaching his son and some others of that neighbourhood, and has a competent Sallary enough to keep him from being any more burthensome to your Lord'p or his other friends, especially if the small exhibition which he says was promised him at his leaving England is still continued, and I'm not without hopes, from this extraordinary change in him that he may yet recommend himself to his former place in the College. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To Mr. Blathwayt :

SIR :

I had the hon'r to receive sometime ago, under your Cover, her Majesty's warrant for remitting into the Excheq'r £3,000 out of the Quitt-rents, the State of that Revenue is so well known to you that I need not tell you how long time it will require before such a consid'ble Draught can be intirely answered. But there is another thing which makes me fear the consequences of drawing out the whole Revenue at this Juncture. We are now in very great apprehension of an Indian War ; the Indians who committed the Massacre in Carolina being so elated with their Success and the weak efforts made against them by the people of that province, that they are become unaccountably insolent and daring, and we daily expect they will begin the like Tragedy here as they acted there, and upon such an Event, I'm sure there was never greater Occasion since Bacon's Rebellion for leaving some money to answer the Exigencys of the Govern-

ment. However, after having done what I think I'm obliged to by representing this matter to my Lord Treasurer and the Lords Com'rs for Trade, it is my duty to obey her Majesty's command, and accordingly the money demanded shall be remitted as soon as it arises. By her Majesty's Instructions to Collo. Hunter and Collo. Nicholson for the better carrying on the Service against Canada last Summer, they were impowered to draw out all the Ballance then remaining on the Quitt-rents here, and accordingly, at Collo. Hunter's desire, not only that ballance was applyed towards the purchase of provisions for that expedition, but on his pressing the laying up all that could be had here as being of the last consequence to the Service, there was advanced by the Receiver Gen'll and myself near £1,700 more, on the Credit of the growing income of the Quitt-rents and on Collo. Hunter's promise to draw bills on the Treasury for what should be further disbursed. What he hath done in relation to those bills I can't yet tell, only that I am, for my share, still unpaid above £1,200, and if the bills should not be answered at the Treasury, I hope I may reasonably expect to be paid out of the Quitt-rents, since I neither had any profit nor proposed any other end in advancing this money, nor for the pains I took in obtaining so great a quantity of provisions (at a rate which must be owned to be very reasonable) than purely to promote her Majesty's Service. I'm sorry to acquaint you that Mr. Le Fevere's behaviour both in the discharge of his Office in College and his private Conversation was so unbecoming that the Gov'rs of the College were obliged to dismiss him from acting any longer as one of the Masters, but they had so great a deference to the hon'ble recommendations he brought with him that they continued his Sallary above 4 months after he was discharged of his office, untill he provided otherwise for himself, I must however so far excuse him that I believe his irregularitys were more owing to his uneasiness with an idle, scandalous woman he brought over with him, than to any vicious disposition of his own, for since I separated them by sending her back to England, he has acted quite another part, and settled in a Gentleman's family where he teaches his son and some others in that Neighbourhood, and has a competent Sallary, enough to keep him from being burthensome to his friends, especially if some small exhibition could be obtained for him at home, and I'm not without hopes from the

extraordinary change there appears in him, he may again recommend himself to his former place in the College w^{ch} I'm sure would be very acceptable to all the Gentlemen of that Society, upon the account of your recommendation, and to none more than myself, who am with great Truth and Esteem.

VIRGINIA, May 8th, 1712.

To Collo. Blakiston :

SIR :

I am to acknowledge the favour of yours of the 18th of Jan'y and 4th of February received by the Fleet, and return you my hearty thanks for the trouble you have taken in the Affairs I recommended to your care.

Collo. Hunter has been very unkind both to my Lord Orkney^o and me in not remitting to his Lord'p the bills I desired,

^oGeorge Hamilton, Earl of Orkney, the governor in chief of the colony, Spotswood being his deputy or Lieutenant-Governor. Incidental upon the connection of the Earl of Orkney with the affairs of Virginia, there is an interesting fact furnished by the Adams Papers in the Collection of MSS. of the Virginia Historical Society, which it is believed has never been in print. In a letter dated London, August 28, 1772, from Philip Mazzie, a native of Tuscany, a patriot and author, afterwards a resident of Virginia and a neighbor of Jefferson, to Thomas Adams at Richmond, Va. (who for some years resided in London as a merchant), after referring to the friendly and familiar relations which had been enjoyed by himself and Adams in the household of Sir William Hamilton, the husband of the famous Lady Emma Hamilton, he evidences that an effort was made to have Sir William appointed Governor of Virginia. Mazzie says: "Sir William Hamilton went to take his leave of the King, and having made an apology for his long delay (as by this time he should have been at Naples), his Majesty told him three times to stay till my Lord Cathcart comes home." * * "My Lady [Hamilton] speaks of hardly anything else but of things relative to Virginia and yourself. You know her desire of going to you, she thinks and dreams of nothing else. She has found out that Sir William's own uncle, George, Earl of Orkney, second son of William, Duke of Hamilton, was governor of Virginia." * * "The fifth son, Lord Archibald Hamilton, was father to our Sir William." * * "She wanted me to write to you to make a party and ask for Sir William. I replied that a woman of her sense should not wish for any such thing, as your asking for him would certainly determine the King and Council never to send him. The only step that could have an effect upon his feeling heart, would be a letter to him from you at Naples to that purpose, and signed by your friends."

which I expected had been done long ago, for I writt to him about the 4th of August and sev'll times since, but to this hour have not received one Sillable in answer, tho' one would imagine he is under some obligations to interest himself in this affair since the money was advanced at his earnest Request, and upon promise of drawing bills by the first Opportunity. I have by this Conveyance remitted to my Lord £600, to make him easy till the return of the Fleet, when I intend to make up what is due to him, out of the money arising by the Quitt-rents, in case I have not advice that Collo. Hunter's bills are paid in England, for tho' by her Majesty's late Warrant it is directed that £3,000. of that Revenue be remitted into the Excheq'r, yet surely the purchase of the provisions for the Canada Expedition being by a precedent Order, will be allowed to be first discharged, if it be not paid by the Treas-ury.

We are here at present in health and peace, but not without as great fears of a War as you are in hopes of a peace, for the Indians that committed the Massacre in Carolina are become very insolent upon their success and the faint attempts that have been made on them by the people of that Country, so that we daily expect, when it will be our turn, to be attacked by them. I have represented to the Ministry the ill consequences of drawing out the Quitt-rents, which is the only fund we can apply to answer a sudden emergency, what effect it will have I know not, but 'tis certain, there was never since Bacon's Rebellion more occasion for having money in bank than at this Juncture. However, I must acquiesce after having done my duty. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, May 15th, 1712.

To the Board of Trade :

MY LORDS :

Having in my letter of the 8th of this month informed Your Lord'ps of my applications to the Governor of North Carolina to appoint Commissioners for settling the Boundaries and the constant answers he made of his want of directions from the Proprietors, I take this opportunity to acquaint Your Lord'ps

that I have since seen his Instructions sent with his Commission, but do not find the least mention of any boundarys any more than if such a Controversy had never been depending. I cannot omitt observing to Your Lord'ps one thing in those Instructions which is like to prove very prejudicial to this Colony, and that is a power given by the Proprietors for the space of 7 years to dispose of their Lands at the rate of 20s. each thousand acres for the first purchase and 12s. Quitt-rents yearly for every hundred, which is but one-fifth part of what is paid there for obtaining Rights to take up the Queen's Land, and one-half of the yearly Quitt-rents payable to her Majesty for the same, and without any Obligation on the Patentees there to seat or cultivate. The publication of such a priviledge has already wrought so much on the people here that great Numbers are flocking to that province to take up Land, and there is no doubt many more will follow upon the prospect of having what Tracts they please on such easy terms. This Excursion of the people into North Carolina, as well as into the Lands of the other Neighbouring proprietors, will be very much furthered by a gen'll Opinion lately revived that there are gold and silver mines in these parts towards the Mountains, And because in the grants to the Proprietors the share of the Crown in Royal Mines is ascertained, and no such declaration made for those found in the Lands held incidentally of her Majesty, people propose to themselves a greater advantage by seeking after them in the former. For this reason, I am told, some persons who formerly had, or fancyed they had made such discoveries here, were discouraged to prosecute them and died with the secret; but now that the same opinion is revived and the humour of making discoveries become more universal I humbly offer to Your Lord'ps' consideration whether so great a profit as may redound from the discovery and working of such mines ought to be lost for want of a Declaration what share her Majesty expects out of them. I find by the grant to the Company that first settled this Colony, The Crown reserved the 5th part of all Silver and gold mines, and that accordingly the ancient Patents express the same. Since the dissolution of that Company the soil reverted to the Crown, the patents conveyed to the Patentees of the Land a due share of all Mines and Minerals, but what that share is has never yet been determined, and in the Act of Assembly concerning the granting of lands pass'd in the year 1706 (but

now repealed) the Form of the patents there established gave entirely to the Patentees all Mines and Minerals without any reservation, and tho' Yo'r Lord'ps made some alterations in the draught of the bill before it passed here into a law, yet I don't find that part of it was questioned or altered, and some patents granted by my Predecessors while that Law was in force have the same Clause in them, but upon the repeal of that Law I altered the form of the patents in this particular and made them conformable to the former, Viz., by granting with the Land (a due share of all mines, &c.) believing that share ought most properly to be determined by the Crown. Wherefore I hope Y'r Lord'ps will be pleased to move her Majesty for a speedy declaration what share is expected if any Royal mines are found in the Land already patented under her Majesty's Grant, and whether if any such be discovered on lands not yet patented, I ought to grant those lands to any private person who makes the discovery. The ascertaining this will encourage people to make discoveries on the Queen's Land, and if found, will keep them where they may bring more profite to the Crown than by runing on the like projects in the lands of any of the Neighbouring proprietors, and since by the Charter to the Proprietors of the Northern neck there is only reserved to the Crown the 5th of all gold and 10th of all Silver Oar, Your Lord'ps will not I hope think it unreasonable to propose to her Majesty that for the encouragement of her Majesty's more imediate Tenants in the other parts of this Colony no greater proportion be demanded of them. I am the more desirous of some speedy directions herein, because I have great reason to believe there are Mines lately discovered here, and I would willingly promote, as far as I am able, anything that may be for the service of her Majesty and the good of this Country. It is like, some of these Mountains may bring forth only such imaginary Oar as I find some people have heretofore busyed themselves about, and that others may prove such barren ones as not to countervail the charge of working, yet 'tis also possible that the earth in this part of the Continent may partake of the same Mineral qualitys with those of the more Southern Climates, and that the diligence of Inquisition or [of the] fancyfull may in the end prove of very great consequence both to the Sovereign and the Subject. I forgot to mention in my last the Success our Guard Ships have had in

the West Indies. I gave them leave last Winter to go to Barbados, not only for conveying our Trade thither, but in consideration that they might be more serviceable there than here during the Winter Season, having joined some of her Majesty's Ships attending those Islands. They fell in with a Fleet of 17 Sail bound for Martinico, and took 12 of them, and amongst the rest the Man of War that Convoyed them, taken by Captain Smith in the Enterprize attending this Station. The Bedford Galley arrived here the other day, and brought in a French Merchant Ship loaded with Sugar, Indico and Cocoa, and I hear Captain Pudner in the Severn, one of our Convoys to the Virginia Fleet, has taken and carryed into New York a French Privateer of 180 men, which very much infested this Coast. I shall not now trouble your Lord'ps with a duplicate of my last (reserving that till the return of our Fleet), nor with anything else, except the assurance of my being with all due Respect,
My Lords, &c.

VIRGINIA, July 26th, 1712.

To the Council of Trade :

MY LORDS :

I shall, according to my promise of the 8th of May (a duplicate of w'ch with another of the same month are inclosed), begin this Letter with answering what your Lord'ps were pleased to inquire in yours of the 26th of October in relation to the several accounts mentioned in my Instructions which have not been hitherto transmitted to your Lord'ps. As to the accounts of ye receipts and payments of publick money required by the 31st Article of my Instructions, I beg leave to informe your Lord'ps that upon my arrival here, enquiring of the Receiver Gen'll for the cyps of those accounts I was told that he constantly transmitted them to the Treasury and to Mr. Blathwayt, Auditor Gen'll of the plantations, from whom he presumed your Lord'ps had the perusal of them, for that no such accounts had been demanded of him by preceding Governors for your Lord'ps' use, and on that information I forbore sending cyps

thereof, being unwilling to trouble your Lord'ps with more papers than had been usually sent by my predecessors, but now that I know your Lord'ps' pleasure, I have sent the last accounts of the Revenue of Quitt-rents and 2s. ¶ hogshead, and shall continue the like care for the future. There is besides this, only a Fund raised by a temporary duty for finishing the Governor's house, and all that hath arisen thereon hath hitherto been applied to that use alone, and no great expectations of its raising much more than is so appropriated. I can't tell whether your Lord'ps may think it worth while to inspect an account of that duty (it being under the management of a particular Treasurer constituted by the Assembly) or of the Tobacco payment regulated by the Assembly in that which they call the Books of Claims, Levied by the pole on the Tithable persons and paid to the publick Creditors to whom it is propor[i]oned. I have, in compliance with the 43d Article of my Instructions, sent Your Lord'ps a list of all offices and Officers within the Government, marked No. 3, and as to the publick charges thereof, I beg leave to refer to the accounts of the Revenues where the Sallarys are particularly set down. The increase or decrease both of her Majesty's Revenue of Quitt-rents and 2s. ¶ hogsheads depend on the Markett for tobacco, and the former has received a consid'ble addition in the number of acres lately discovered and some new land taken up, yet, while the price of Tobacco is so low there is no probability of that Revenues increasing much, And for the same reason ye 2s. ¶ hogshead has been for divers years past in a decreasing condition; the people being in sundry places of the Country totally discouraged from making tobacco,¹⁰⁰ but as soon as the Commodity

¹⁰⁰ See *ante*, p. 72. For the necessary supplies of clothing, which from the low price of tobacco they were unable to procure from England, as heretofore, they were driven to "planting cotton and sowing flax, and by mixing the first with their wool to supply the want of coarse Cloathing and Linnen." Cotton was planted in Virginia so early as 1621, in the time of Sir Francis Wyatt, and flourished greatly. See *Smith*, vol. ii, p. 60, and *Stith*, p. 218. Several of the early Governors of the Colony used diligent efforts to secure the fabrication of certain articles which it was believed it could profitably raise; but their designs were thwarted, as well by the selfish injustice of the Mother Country as by the opposition of the tillers of the soil, who, in a matter so important to themselves, had the boldness to consult what they held to be their true interests.

becomes again valuable (of which the near prospect of a happy peace gives us the greatest hopes) there's no doubt both those Revenues will be consid'ly advanced. As to the 46th Article of my Instructions, relating to Patent places, There are in this Colony only two Under the Great Seal, Vizt: the Secretary and the Auditor, which last has a Deputy acting under him here, and the Receiver Gen'll, who holds his Office under her Majesty's Royal Sign Manual. Whenever I observe anything in the management of either of those Offices, which may be worthy Your Lord'ps' notice, I shall not fail to communicate the same with my thoughts thereon. The obtaining an account of all the Inhabitants according to the 67th Article of my Instructions, has been attempted by former Governors with very little Success, for the people are so possessed with the apprehensions

Sir William Berkeley, his Deputy, Colonel Francis Morrison, and Sir Edmund Andros, were particularly prominent in not only advising the people to diversify the products of the field, but to engage in the manufacture of hemp, flax, salt, and potash. (*Beverley*, edition of 1722, pp. 50, 90, 92.) In 1770 there was shipped to Liverpool from Virginia and Maryland four bales of cotton. Before the Revolutionary War, Virginia exported *communibus annis*, hemp, flaxseed and cotton, to the value of \$8,000. (*Memoir of the Cotton Plant*, by Hon. Whitmarsh B. Seabrook, in *Proceedings of the Agricultural Convention of the Agricultural Society of South Carolina*, Columbia, 1846, pp. 113, 173.) Mr. Jefferson, in his *Notes on Virginia*, written in 1781 (p. 119), says: "We have manufactured within our families the most necessary articles of clothing. Those of cotton will bear some comparison with the same kinds of manufacture in Europe; but those of flax, hemp and wool are very coarse, unsightly and unpleasant." The variety cultivated was the black seed kind. The necessities of the war of the Revolution, and the state of things existing for some time after it, greatly increased the number of domestic fabrications of wool, until about the year 1790, when the practice of using homespun became very common, it being the habitual costume of many gentlemen in the most cultivated circles, and in public life. The yarn was spun at home and sent to the nearest weaver.

Among the manufacturing establishments in the colony, one in the vicinity of Murray's Ferry in Williamsburg, owned by Irish settlers, supplied the adjacent country. The cotton for the spinning process was prepared generally by the field laborers, who, in addition to their ordinary work, picked the seed from the bulb at the rate of 4 lbs. per week.

From 1784 to 1790 inclusive, the number of bags of cotton grown in the North American States, and exported thence, was respectively 8, 14, 6, 109, 389, 842, and 81, which are estimated as having weighed 150 pounds each. The weight of bags in 1833 had increased to 330 pounds each.

that a Capitation tax will be the consequence of taking those lists that they never would nor will be persuaded to give up the number of their Familys with any exactness, nor can they be compelled to do it without a Law for that purpose. The most exact acco'ts I can obtain is by the Lists of Tithables which comprehend all male persons, bond or free, above sixteen years of age, and all Negro, Mulatto, and Indian Women of the same age, the number of which your Lord'ps will find in the General List I have herewith sent, marked No. 3, where you will also observe in another Column the number of Freemen fit to bear arms, amounting to 12,051, and I believe there cannot be less than an equal number of Negros and other Servants, if it were fitt to arm them upon any Occasion. The accounts of Births, Christenings and Burials, tho' directed to be kept by an old Law of this Country,¹⁰¹ has been so long neglected, that in order to obtaining a more exact computation thereof, I have been obliged to issue a proclamation to enforce that law, and have directed Lists to be transmitted to the Council Office every half year, the first return of which will be made next October, whereby I hope to answer what is required by the 68th Article of my Instructions. I have made inquiry concerning the Stores of War in this Country, and find that by order of former Governors the arms and ammunition sent hither by her Majesty, some years ago, were distributed through the sev'll Countys, to be more ready for the service of the Militia upon any Emergency,

¹⁰¹ First enacted in February, 1631-2, *Hening* i, p. 158, as follows: "In every parrish church within this colony shall be kept by the mynister a booke wherein shall be written the day and yeare of every christeninge, weddinge and buriall." A previous act of the same date enjoins the publication by ministers of the "baynes of matrimony," three several "Sundays or holydays in the time of divyne service in the parish churches where the sayd persons [designing matrimony] dwell," before performing the marital service, unless a "facultie or lycense" had been "graunted by the Governor;" and in any event "only betweene the houres of eight and twelve in the forenoon." The act requiring the keeping of parish registers was several times reënacted, but was never generally observed. Bishop Meade, to aid him in preparing his work, the *Old Churches and Families of Virginia*, in 1854, collected quite all of the vestry books and parish registers then extant in Virginia, and after the completion of his work deposited all the manuscripts used therein in the library of the Theological Seminary near Alexandria, Va. A majority of them, it is believed, still remain there.

but either through the negligence or death of some of the Officers to whom they were entrusted, there has been great Embezzlements made therein, which I'm now endeavouring to discover, in order to lay a true account of those Stores before y'r Lord'ps, according to the 75th and 76th articles of my Instructions, tho' notwithstanding all the diligence I could use, I have not been able to obtain the same, so 'as to send it by this Conveyance.

The 92d article, concerning the Strength of our Neighbours, I suppose to be meant of the Neighbouring Indians (for there are no other foreign Nations near this Colony), In answer to which there are nine Nations of Indians Tributary to this Government, Vizt: The Pamunkys, Chickahomins, Nansemunds, Nottoways, Maherins, Sapons, Stukanocks, Occoneechees and Totteros, whose number of men, Women and Children do not exceed 700 in all, and of these there may be reckoned 250 fighting men. These are all in an Entire Subjection to this Government and live quietly on our Frontiers trafficking with the Inhabitants their Skins and Furrs for Cloathing, powder, Shott and other European manufactures. The next Nation of Indians with whom we have had frequent correspondence and who are most like to annoy us is the Tuscaruro, said to be about 2,000 fighting men. They live within the bounds of Carolina, and before the late Massacre, committed there by some of them and others, had a constant Trade with our Inhabitants for the like Commodities as our own Indians, but since that time I have prohibited all Commerce with them till they give satisfaction for the murders committed in Carolina. Besides these We have no other Nations that frequent our ffrontiers, and those with whom our Traders have ye Chiefest Traffique for Skins live some 4 or 500 miles to the So. West of us and their names scarce known to any but the Traders. As to the 109th article, there have been no Negros imported into this Government from the Coast of Africa either by the Company or separate Traders since my arrival, nor like to be while the price of Tobacco is so low and the Country so much in debt. There have been a few brought from Barbados, and are generally such as have been first entered there, of which I doubt not you Lord'ps have acco't from thence. The 110th article, I hope, hath been complied with by my former Letters, wherein I have taken the liberty to

represent to Your Lord'ps the wants and defects of this Government, as well as the improvement which I conceived might be made, according as the same occurred to my Observation, and shall not fail to continue the like Representations from time to time as I find Occasion. At present I cannot think anything of greater concernment to this Country, as well as the particular Service of her Majesty, than what I hinted to Your Lord'ps in my letter of the 15th of May, for encouraging the discovery of Silver mines. I have, since the return of the Baron de Graffenried from Potomack, discoursed him concerning the probability of Mines in these parts, he says, tho' he has no doubts of finding such from the accounts he received from one Mr. Mitchell, a Swiss Gentleman who went on the like discoverys some years ago, Yet he finds himself much discouraged from prosecuting his first intentions, not only because of the uncertainty of the property of the Soil, whether belonging to the Queen or the proprietors, but because the share which the Crown may claim in those Mines is also uncertain, and that after all his trouble in the discovery he may chance to have only his labour for his pains. Whereas he would gladly employ his utmost diligence in making such discoverys if it were once declared what share her Majesty would expect out of the produce of the Mines, or if her Majesty would be pleased to take the Mines into her own hands, promising him a suitable Reward for his discovery, and granting him the superintending of the works with a handsome Sallary, he says it is a matter not new to him, there having been Mines of the like nature found on his father's lands in Switzerland, which were at first wrought for the benefit of the State, but turning to small account were afterwards Yielded to the proprietors of the soil upon paying a share out of the produce thereof; that he has some relations now concerned therein, and by their interest can procure skilfull workmen out of Germany for carrying on the works. I shall submit to your Lor'ps' better judgment, which of the alternatives proposed by the Baron will be best for her Majesty's service, and shall hope for a speedy signification of her Majesty's pleasure thereon, for promoting a design which I can but believe will turn out to the advantage of her Majesty and the improvement of this Colony. The Baron has not been so far up the Potomack as to discover the head Springs of that River nor to make a true draught of

their Course, so that I can't now send Your Lord'ps the Mapps I promised in my last, nor forme a Judgment of the pretentions of the sev'll proprietors. Having in sundry of my former letters given your Lord'ps an account of the principal Transactions of this Government which have been treated of in Council, I shall not renew your trouble by any Remarks on the Journals, which I now send entire from the 24th of July, 1711, to the 21st of July, 1712, inclusive. I have also sent the duplicates of the Laws and Journals of the Assembly, together with the sev'll proclamations issued this last year.

It is with very great concern that I find myself still obliged to represent to your Lord'ps the unhappy situation of affairs in the neighbouring province of Carolina,¹⁰² For since the hasty peace concluded with the Indians, of w'ch I gave your Lord'ps an account in my last, The forces sent from South Carolina are returned home and the Indians have committed two fresh Massacres, and it is not likely they will stop there, if there be truth in what one of the Chiefs concerned in the first Massacre hath lately confessed at his execution, That the Senecas have promised them a powerfull Assistance by the latter end of next month, who are in their way to fall on some of the Tributary Indians on our frontiers. And what seems to confirm this is the acco't I have just now seen in a letter from the Sec'ry of New York to the Governor of North Carolina, that the French have been very active to persuade the Senequas to join with the Tuscaruros, and it is to be feared have prevailed with them. The conduct of the Governor of North Carolina, from the beginning of this Indian War, has been so unaccountably irregular, that it has reduced all the measures I was willing to enter into for their Assistance ineffectual, and I hope when I have mentioned a few instances thereof, Your Lord'ps will not judge me an idle Spectator of the miserys of my Fellow Subjects. For first, when I had engaged our Assembly to vote a consid'ble Supply for the succour of that province, their Assembly, which was then sitting, instead of acting in concert with ours, fell into such heats amongst themselves because they could

¹⁰² As stated *ante* p. 137—In addition to the danger of Savage massacre they were suffering from a "pestilential Distemper," the dread and loathsome Yellow Fever.

not oblige the Govern'r to admitt into their former offices the most notorious Fomenters of the late Rebellion, that they would take no measures against the common Enemy, and to this behaviour of theirs may be in a great measure attributed that of our Burgesses, who fell from their first Resolutions, and could not thereafter be prevailed upon to give assistance to a people so wanting to themselves. Next, when I had by a solemn Treaty, made in the presence of our Assembly, engaged the upper towns of the Tuscaruros to joine in cutting off those concerned in the Massacre, and had communicated the same to the Government of North Carolina, That Government instead of concurring with me in stipulations that provided wholly for their succour and the Relief of the Captives, rather chose to denounce War against all the Towns in general, and without waiting to see whether those upper towns would perform any of their Engagements, they immediately fell upon those very people who (how little so ever they designed to execute their promise) hereupon argued that we had violated ours. And lastly (for I will not trouble Your Lord'ps with all the instances I could give), when their whole Assembly joined in Address to me last Spring, begging an aid of 200 men for the better carrying on the War, and in that Address told me that they had raised £4,000, whereby the Succours sent from hence would be provided for. I thereupon made extraordinary Efforts to assist them with 200 white men and Indians, as Y'r Lord'ps will observe in the Journal of the Council the 24th of April last, and accordingly directed the Rendevouze of those Forces on the 10th of May, Yet upon my meeting the Governor of North Carolina to adjust certain preliminaries for the better carrying on the Service and Subsistence of the troops, I found that Government never intended to furnish so much as provisions or be at any manner of expence for them, but on the contrary had laid 10 per cent. on all provisions carryed into that country, So that the Forces sent to their assistance must not only be paid and subsisted at the charge of this Government, but must also pay a duty for the Victuals they eat while they were employed in the defence of that Country; and besides this, I found the Commander of their Forces had of his own head clapt up a peace with the Indians upon very odd and unaccountable conditions which no body expected to last long, and it seems he did not in-

tend it should, for he soon after surprized some Towns and carryed off a great many Captives of those who looked upon themselves as secure under the Treaty he had made with them, and by that means he has entailed a new War on the people of North Carolina in which he was resolved to have no share, having immediately after set sail with his Prisoners to South Carolina, and the 2 Massacres I have above mentioned have been the immediate consequences of this Mr. Barnwell's Treachery.¹⁰³ These proceedings both discourage and disable me to assist the unfortunate people of that province, who must be forced to abandon all their Settlements on Neuse and Pamlico Rivers and thereby encourage the Heathen to further attempts, both on the further part of that Country, and on our Frontiers, and I must sitt down under the Mortification of seeing myself unable to protect her Majesty's Subjects untill a nearer approach of danger convinces the people of this Colony of there Error in not making timely provision to hinder the growing power of the heathen, and alarms both Countrys to act there vigorously for their mutual defence. It was but the other day that a party of the Tuscaruros killed 3, and wounded 2 Nottoway Indians, our Tributarys, as they were hunting near our Inhabitants, which seem only a prelude to what we may expect after their conjunction with the Senecas, I understand by some Traders lately come from South Carolina, that they make great Clamours there, as if our Indian Traders had assisted the Tuscaruros with ammunition, but I'm persuaded Your Lord'ps will find enough on ye Council Journals since Sept'r last to refute the report, and to satisfy Y'r Lord'ps that this Government hath taken all imaginable care to prevent any such Commerce.

Your Lord'ps will observe by our Journal, that even the Trade

¹⁰³ Wheeler (*History of North Carolina*, p. 37,) gives the following account of these occurrences: "Governor Hyde called out the militia of North Carolina. The Legislature of South Carolina with alacrity raised 600 militia and 360 Indians under Col. Barnwell, who with great expedition crossed the wilderness that then separated North from South Carolina, and was joined on the Neuse by such portions of the North Carolina militia as could be spared from guarding the inhabitants. The Indians were fortified on the banks of the Neuse, in the present county of Craven, about eighteen miles west of Newbern. Here they received the attack of the whites. They were defeated with great slaughter; more than 300 savages were killed, and 100 made prisoners."

with the Western Indians has been shutt up ever since the last of October, out of consideration for the province of North Carolina, but finding that Trade still carryed on by the people of South Carolina, and that those Indians have no correspondence with the Tuscaruros, I have again, with the advice of the Council, opened the same for our Inhabitants, lest it should be lost to us, and the Indians obliged to sue to the French for those Supplys which South Carolina can't furnish them. The Nations with whom this trade is carryed on live sev'll hundred miles from the Tuscaruros, and as our Traders assured me, they must travell at least 1,500 miles to come at the most considerable of them who live on the back of the Mountains in the Latitude of Virginia, if this be true (which I shall know more certainly at the return of our Traders, to whom I have given directions to make observations of the Latitude), Yo'r Lord'ps will, no doubt, think it still more unreasonable that the Carolina men should impose dutys and seize the goods of her Majesty's Subjects for barely passing through their Country. Since my last I have had the honour of Your Lord'ps of the first February last, and shall always rejoice when any part of my administration is acceptable to Your Lord'ps, being with, &c.

VIRGINIA, July 26th, 1712.

To My Lord Dartmouth :

MY LORD :

Since my last, of the 8th of May, I have had the hon'r of Y'r Lord'p's of the 14th of February, 1711-12, in which Your Lord'p is pleased to take notice of her Maj'tie's gracious condescension in favour of the Governments of New England and New York by leaving in their hands the arms and ammunition designed for the expedition to Canada. I have no doubt of the like marks of her Royal favour to this Colony whenever her Majesty shall be satisfied we are in much danger. But in the meantime it is my duty to represent truely whatever appearances there are of that nature, without taking upon me to presage what may be the Event of the preparations of our

Enemys and the want of Sufficient Stores of War here for our necessary defence, for besides what I have communicated to Your Lord'p in sundry of my former letters concerning the growing power of our neighbouring Indians, I have just now seen a letter from the Secretary of New York to the Governor of North Carolina, and this seems to correspond well enough with the confession of one of the Chief men of the Tuscaruos lately taken and executed for being concerned in the Massacre in Carolina, who declared at his death that the Senequas had promised to joine the Tuscaruos with a strong Body of their people by the latter end of next month.

I have, on former occasions, acquainted Your Lord'p of my endeavours to assist Carolina for making a speedy end of this war, and of the disappointments I have mett with both from our own Assembly and from that Government, and I am now to informe Your Lord'p that after the inconsiderate Treaty concluded with the Indians by the Commander of the South Carolina Forces, he has been the first that broke it by surprising some towns who thought themselves secure on the faith of that Treaty, and immediately sett sail with his prisoners for South Carolina, leaving the people for whose assistance he was sent in a worse condition than he found them, for the Indians enraged by this piece of Treachery have again begun their hostility and committed two fresh Massacres on Neuse River, and but the other day killed three and wounded two of our Tributarys as they were hunting on our Frontiers, which I look upon only as an earnest of what we may expect after their conjunction with the Senequas.

* * * * *

I have herewith sent Y'r Lord'p the Transcript of the Journals of Council and Assembly, and of the Laws pass'd here in their last Session, together with the proclamations issued the last year, upon which having already observed to Your Lord'p whatever is most material therein, I shall not now give Your Lord'p the trouble of any further Remarks. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, July 26th, 1712.

To the Bishop of London :

MY LORD :

By the letters I have lately had the hon'r to receive from Your Lord'p, I perceive Your Lord'p had not then been informed of the measures taken to gain our Tributary Indians to lett some of their Children be educated at our College, and instructed in the Christian faith, and lest my letter last Novemb'r, which fully explained that matter, should have miscarried, I beg leave here to hint to Your Lord'p what was more largely mentioned there. It was as well with an intention to bring that people to embrace Christianity as to secure their friendship to the Government, that I proposed to them to send two Sons of the Chief men of each town to the College, who were to remain as Hostages for the fidelity of their Nations, and to be instructed in Literature and the principles of Christianity, at the expence of the College. And that I might the better win them over to relish this proposal, I offered to quitt all the Tribute which they used formerly to pay yearly to the Governor so long as their Children continued with us. This had so good an effect upon them that there are now (together with the 4 Indians brought by the College some years ago) about twenty Indian Children at the College, they have a Master to teach them and are decently cloathed and maintained, so that they seem very well pleased with the change of their condition as indeed their parents and others of their Nations who come frequently to see them, express much satisfaction with the care that is taken of them, and frequently lament their own misfortune in not having the like advantages in their Youth; but as the Revenue of the College settled by Mr. Boyle for that Service is insufficient to support so great a charge, I hope Your Lord'p will use your interest for obtaining some contributions from the Society for propagating the Gospell, and from other charitable persons to help the College to promote so good a design. Mr. Perry can informe Your Lord'p better what is the yearly income of Mr. Boyle's gift, it being under his management, but I'm very well assured it will not defray the charge of such a number of Children, and had it not been for a considerable sum in bank before the College

provided themselves with Indians, we should have been discouraged now from receiving so great a number, w^{ch} however could not be less than they are; and your Lord^p will no doubt be of Opinion it is not fitt to send back any of them to their towns on pretence of our want of Ability to maintain them. By this method of Civilizing and instructing their Youth in the principles of Christianity, there may be great hopes in time, of Converting the whole Nations to which they belong. But as there appears at this instant a great disposition among those Indians to be instructed in our Religion, I would humbly offer to Your Lord^p to move the Society for propagating the Gospel for one or two Missionarys to reside at the principal towns of the Indians and have a Church or Chappell built there, and a School-house with an allowance for a Clerk who may also serve as Usher. Such a person, if he were a man of sense and of a Sober life and Conversation would find it no hard matter to convert the Indians and be usefull to the English Inhabitants who live in the same Neighbourhood, and I must freely own to your Lord^p that the labours of one or two worthy Divines there would be of very great service to the English Inhabitants seated thereabouts, who are so remote from any Church that they seldom or never hear divine Worship or Sermons, and are more like to degenerate into paganisme than to bring over the Indians by their good Example to the faith they at present profess. There is one Mr. Forbes, a Clergyman lately sent in by your Lord^p, would gladly accept the Office of one of these Missionarys if the Society think fitt to encourage him, and I know not a fitter person, both for his Capacity and commendable behaviour. I hope the Society will the more easily agree to this since 'tis the first expence that has ever been demanded of them in behalf of this Colony, tho' every other plantation has been in a manner supplied at their charge. I could have wished our Assembly would have settled some Fund for this Service, but as they value themselves upon furnishing a handsome maintainance to a Number of the Orthodox Clergy equal if not exceeding all the other English plantations on ye Continent, there's very little Expectations of bringing them either to augment the present Sallerys of the Ministers or entering upon new expences for Evangelizing the Heathen. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, July 26th, 1712.

*To the Arch B'p of Canterbury:*¹⁰⁴

MAY IT PLEASE YOUR GRACE:

I shall ever think it my duty to give your Grace an acco't from time to time of everything that may tend to the promoting of the true Religion in this Country, and should have sooner communicated to your Grace the Attempts I have made since my arrival here to bring the Indians to Christianity, but that I waited till I could more fully informe your Grace of their success. It has, I confess, been with some difficulty that I have overcome the generall prejudice of that people and prevailed with them to send some of their children to be educated at our College which had been formerly endeavoured in vain, and I believe would still have proved so, if I had not tempted them to it by a promise of remitting their annual tribute payable to me as Governor, as long as they suffered their Children to continue with us. This has so far gained upon them that I have now gott two of the Chiefs men's sons of each Nation sent to the College, the whole number is about 20, who have a Master to teach them and are decently Cloathed and maintained out of the Fund given by Mr. Boyle for that use, and seem very well pleased with the change of their condition, their Parents and others of their Nations who come frequently to see them express much satisfaction in the care that is taken of them, and not only consent to their being educated in the principles of our Religion but seem also to have no aversion to the same themselves, seeing some of them have lamented their misfortune in not meeting with the like advantages in their Youth. Tho' the number of our Tributary Indians do not much exceed 700 Souls, Yet they are divided into so many Nations or Cantons, speaking different Languages, that I was obliged to take some of each, that all of them might partake of the benefitt intended them, w^{ch} is the reason there is more now at the College than ye ffund I have mentioned can maintain, and our Chief de-

¹⁰⁴ Thomas Tenison, Arch-Bishop of Canterbury, a prelate of great piety and learning. He was born in Cottenham, Cambridgeshire, Sept. 29, 1636; made Bishop of Lincoln in 1691; advanced to the primacy on the death of Arch-Bishop Tillotson in 1694, and died in December, 1715.

pendence for supplying the deficiency is on the charitable contributions of the Society for propagating the Gospell where your Grace so worthily presides, and with whom I doubt not Your Grace will employ your interest for promoting so pious a design.

The good disposition of these Indians I hope will also meet with encouragement from the Society, for I am really of Opinion that if one or two Missionarys of good lives and zealous in their Offices were placed at the most consid'ble towns of those Nations, it would be no hard matter to bring them all over in a generation or two from their own Pagan Superstitions to the true faith, and such Missionarys might also be very usefull to the English Inhabitants on our Frontiers who live so remote from any Church that I must freely own to Your Grace they are more like to degenerate into Paganisme or into a deadness in Religion not much remote from it, than to gain upon their Indian Neighbours by a good Example. Churches and Schoolhouses built at those Indian towns with an allowance for a reader who might also assist in teaching the Youth both of the Indian and neighbouring Inhabitants would undoubtedly have a good effect, especially if to the Office of the Missionarys there were also added by the Government here the power of Justices of the peace for deciding differences between the Indians and their Neighbours, which cannot now be so regularly done by reason of the remoteness from the established Magistrates, but that there are frequent injurys unredressed, w^{ch}, in a great measure, irreconcile the Indians both to our Religion and Government. There is a very worthy Clergyman in this Country who would willingly accept the Office of one of those Missionarys if the Society think fitt to give him encouragement, and I hope y^r Grace will find it the more easy to prevail with ye Society in this particular, because it is the first expence that has been demanded of them for this Colony, when almost every other on the Continent has had their Ministry in a manner supported at their charge, and I should not have troubled your Grace with such a Request could I have prevailed with our Assembly to settle a ffund for the Service, but I cannot during the present poverty of the Country. Amongst other losses suffered by the burning of the College, the whole Records of the Visitors and Governors, together with their

accounts, were unfortunately consumed. I am informed Your Grace had a transcript of both from Collo. Nicholson some short time before he left this Government.¹⁰⁵ I therefore beg leave, in behalf of the Gentlemen concerned in that foundation, to request the favour of your Grace to let them have that Transcript, or an attested Copy, that they may be enabled to re-establish their Records, together with their new building, w^{ch} is now in a good forwardness. I am, &c.

VIRGINIA, July 26th, 1712.

To the Comm^{rs} of the Customs:

GENTLEMEN:

I shall lay hold of all opportunity of paying my respects to your Hon^{rs}, tho' having never yet received any letters from your Board since my arrival in this Government, I have little else to trouble you with at present, and especially since Collo. Quarry is the bearer hereof, who, by reason of his perfect knowledge of every thing under your management in these plantations, will make it unnecessary for me to mention here what I have discoursed with him during his short stay in this place, more particularly in relation to the sev^{ll} matters communicated to you in my former [letter], on which I shall be glad to receive your commands. I shall only desire leave to joine with Collo. Quarry in a letter I have seen of his in behalf of Collo. Richard Lee, sometimes Collector of North Potomack, he is a Gentleman of as fair character as any in the Country for his exact justice, honesty and unexceptionable Loyalty in all the Stations wherein he has served in this Government, he has behaved himself with great integrity and sufficiency, and when his advanced age would no longer permitt him to execute to his own satisfaction the duty of Naval Officer of the same District, I thought I could not better reward his meritt than by bestowing

¹⁰⁵ In view of the deficiencies in the early records of William and Mary College, this information should instigate a diligent inquiry in England for the documents, as stated.

that imployment on his son. I would not (at his request) refuse the doing him this Justice to Your Hon'rs, in hopes it may have some weight with you to deliver up the bonds he gave for the Execution of his Office, that he may obtain what he so earnestly desires to see, his Securitys discharged in his own time. There is no Objection against him here, he having quitted his Office of Collector before the College had the grant of the dutys on tobacco. And now that I have mentioned the Collector's bonds, I shall conclude with observing to You that the bonds lately sent hither for your Collectors to sign, do not seem to be calculated for the circumstances of this Country, not only in that they require the Collector to pay to the Cashier of the Custom house the dutys which are granted to the College by a Charter under the great Seal, but because there is such a Restraint upon the Officers in relation to their Trading, as if taken in the Literal Sense, must disable every person here from holding any of those imployments, since a man must live very poorly if he has no supplys of goods for the use of his Family from England or the plantations, which must come consigned to him, and must be entered in his name, or else he must be forced on that piece of ill husbandry, of buying everything at double rate in a store.¹⁰⁶ Your Hon'rs will see the explanation which some of Your Collectors would have made in those bonds, And I hope you will give such directions as may satisfy the Governors of the College that its Revenue is not intended to be diverted into another Channell. I send herewith the Duplicates of 18 Registers of Ships and Vessells being all that have been Registered in this Colony since my last Return to your Board. I am, &c.

¹⁰⁶ The Exchange with England was at times as much as fifty per cent., which with the profit claimed by the Virginia merchant, doubtless often made the cost to the planter more than double the price at which sold in England.



ALDERMAN LIBRARY

The return of this book is due on the date indicated below

DUE	DUE
MAR 25 1967	
JUN 2 1964	
JAN 18 1967	
5/29/967	
AUG 1 1967	
6/4/80	

Usually books are lent out for two weeks, but there are exceptions and the borrower should note carefully the date stamped above. Fines are charged for over-due books at the rate of five cents a day; for reserved books there are special rates and regulations. Books must be presented at the desk if renewal is desired.

L-1

CX 001 048 157

10/11/01

RETURN TO STACKS
PRESERVATION SEARCH CONTAINER



